

Time Ghosts - AI War

Preface

Welcome to our Twilight Zone. The "Time Ghost" book was started in late 2008 and reedited to add in a second unfinished book as the story line with all the short stories in 2021. The first writing was "Future Monster, 2008", second was "Cancer" in 2013 and third was the "AI War, 2016". This Science Fiction was inspired by multiple nightmares, testimonies in counseling sessions and from criminals or news stories about such, various videos, articles or social media groups or products censored in 2020 and onward, and spans over a 15+ year period of time.

The year is 2087. The world's population is not in the billions but millions.

2 mad scientist 20 years earlier attempted to create a way to save this world by choosing the best person from the past to save the world in the future.

So now can our warrior from the past bring back his kingdom and restore our world after the AI's have decided that their Gods are flawed and then killed billions of them?

The 'AI War' is one Timeline we pray never exists.

It is very important to read this booklet first, vs. chronological order of the other Time Ghost books: Time Ghosts: The Early Years, Time Ghosts: Genny, Time Ghosts: Jon's Cancer. Others may or may not follow.

This is in Screenplay format and the Table of Contents is the Story Board.

Table of Contents for the Time Ghosts (TOC):

Invitation	2
Jon is Back	3
Me-Tis and Mu-Tis	4
Melody	5
The K's	5
After WW3	6
Remodeling	8
Everyone is Sick	13
Cindy	14
Cindy's Parents	17
Ester	18
The AI Inside	23
Stop the Steal	26
Stop the Steal #2	27
Trip to the Ether	28

Stop the Steal - Failure	30
Stop the Steal #3	34
Talk to the Spider Cave	34
House Cleaning - Silo	35
Stop the Steal #4.	36
Missile Guts	37
Time Ghost	39
The Ether #2	40
Flashback	41
Make 'em Blind.	41
Jon Building up His Silver	44
K's Movable	44
Re-image.	56
Time Line Shift.	58
Unknown Betrayal	61
Spider to Human	64
Octopi Guinea Pigs	67
Prototype	69
2 nd Message	70
A New Ship.	71
Flashback	75
Death Star	78
Sexpot's Escape.	101
Sexpot Discovery	104
The Deal with Clara	119
Erase it all	120
Alternate Scenario.	124
Final Ending to Original Scenario	128
Nothing	128

[Invitation.]

[Location: Indiana, large flat outdoor area. Time: 2087 AD. (10 years after Jon's death.)]

{Misty telepathically to Sexpot: I shutdown Christian City. Everyone is going to help you out there.

Sexpot to Misty: Thanks this is the largest invitation we ever had. We have no clue but we think we are drawing in a 300 mile area. About 30,000 people are here now and buses are still coming.}

[Pause.]

Lesa: What is going on? The sky is red.

[The crowds fall to the ground. Some of the Athenians around Sexpot fall to the ground.]

Sexpot [terrified]: They are all dead. Everyone is dead!

The C's (spiders, 2 women who speak in perfect unison): We have to get to the buildings.

Someone just declared nuclear war all over this planet, the best we can figure and our telepathy to Big Brother is horrid. It wasn't the Muslims or the Chinese or Russia, they got nuked also, same as us.

If we don't get to shelter, we will die too. Oh well all for my organic laptop.

[One of the C's pitches her laptop in a garbage dumpster near by.]

[Location: Main Cave, Indiana, USA, Time: Sometime in the future about 20 years after Jon's death.]

[Location: Black Cave, Jon's Old Office. Time: 2097.]

[Jon is Back.]

[Jon opens his eyes and realizes he is standing in a puddle of Silver [A liquid similar to mercury in appearance but very light weight] with a fusion reactor [Red and blue lights shining through 7 extremely large crystals.] over the top of his head. He doesn't hear a single sound except the waterfalls. He looks around the cave, it is lit, typical of nighttime lighting. He looks down at his arm, and there is magic marker writing, "This is a re-image." He walks out from under the reactor out of the Silver over to the hooks and grabs a robe and puts it on. He takes one of the square patches off of a white board and puts it on his neck. Then he walks toward the Dinning Area. When he gets into the main part of the Main Cave where the netting is above him, he still hears no sounds.]

Jon [touching his square patch]: Little Brother, what is the date?

Little Brother: The date is 2097, 20 years after your death. We need to verify that you are you.

[A cell phone drops down, and Jon just automatically catches it.]

What is your password? And what is the answer and the secret question? Please enter one of the disintegration screens.

Jon: Little Brother. Why so much?

Little Brother: Just to make sure you're not an AI.

Jon: As in a Terminator?

Little Brother: Yes.

Jon proceeds to walk over to one of the disintegration screens, attaches a cell phone to the place provided on the screen, the patch and his robe then walks through it.

Jon: Little Brother, are you satisfied? Do you realize that I am a re-image?

Little Brother: Yes, you were the last image the K's made of you; you are 82 years old today, so to speak; happy second re-birthday.

Jon: Amazing I didn't even know they did it. Where is everyone? This place seems awfully dead quiet.

Little Brother: They all went to the Spider Cave, because they cannot defend the Main Cave.

Jon: You got to be kidding me?

Little Brother: No.

Jon: Turn the internal lights on, I am tired of walking around in the dark.

Little Brother: Liza, left specific orders not to turn on the main power.

Jon: I would like to know what did I do my 82th birthday morning.

Little Brother: You had sex with Genny twice. Your Silver was at 5.

Jon: Just checking to make sure I am not in an alternate Timeline.

Little Brother, please fill me in on what has happened recently. Just a quick overview of the past few years, and roughly how many of those who should be alive are still living?

Little Brother: Sorry, you lived 83 years and died the day you already knew.

A rough estimation is 30% of all who you knew, who are immortal or have a long life expectancy are alive.

Jon: Is there a war going on? And please elaborate.

Little Brother: Yes, a war has been going on with the AI's for approximately 10 years.

At least 90% of the human race is extinct. 100% of the Athenians are extinct. Ms. Morals and her clan disappeared in the first year of the war. I have only very limited access to outside information. The satellites are under the control of the AI's. So this information may not be completely correct.

[Jon starts to wobble a little bit like he is about to pass out so he sits down on the cave floor. Once he feels better, he realizes he's hungry. Jon walks over to the kitchen and opens up one of the freezers and closes it almost immediately. You can tell from the look on his face, it has rotten food inside. Jon opens up the next one, reaches in and grabs out 2 egg omelettes. He opens up the microwave and proceeds to cook them. He pulls them out of microwave and drops one omelette onto the other one and puts the microwave plate on the large dish washer rack. Then he walks back into the Main Cave where he was talking to Little Brother.]

Jon: I am a little better now so Little Brother, what do you know of Sexpot, Lesa, New-girl, Newest-girl, Liza, oh phooey, just go down the list starting with Sexpot and work your way through all the ones who were living when I was imaged and run the stats down the screen. Then Little Brother, I want to see with visuals, what has happened the best you can?

Little Brother: Coming soon.

[You can hear a little winding of machinery, and then a headset falls down, and Jon catches it in midair. Jon eats, put on the headset. Jon walks over to the wall grabs an air bed and blows it up with the attached air cylinder. Then he walks back to where he was and sits on the air bed. Then he proceeds to turn on the headset and flips down the eye screens.]

Jon: Little Brother. Please bring me up to date. It can be just the highlights of what has happened.

[Me-Tis and Mu-Tis.] [TOC](#)

[A few hours later, Jon hears some noise, and carefully walks over to the wall grabs a 357 off the wall and puts it in his robe pocket. He looks over toward the more lit part of the cave and he sees two humanoid like objects, slowly descending onto the ground. He smiles and starts to walk over to them.]

Jon: Hi ladies, I was wondering if you were here or not.

[The humanoid objects slowly turn into two young ladies, which have their long grayish hair wrapped around them to take the place of clothing.]

Ladies: Is that really you?

Jon: Yes it is. Apparently I am a re-image. See my arm.

[The two young ladies walk over toward Jon, and they hug him.]

Ladies: They left us, and they did not even say goodbye.

Jon: I am so sorry. I don't know why they would do that. I don't know why they did not invite you to come along. Or at least visit once in a while. Hey, I would have told you to keep my cave safe.

[They quit hugging and smile at him. Jon turns around with a concerned look on his face and looks toward the waterfall and notices that his old Lounge area and bedroom area is kind of in ruin. Then he stares at them from top to bottom.]

Jon: Are you two okay?

Ladies: We are much better now.

Jon: I am very disappointed with you both, no one dies on my watch. Especially not the two of you.

[Ladies look really sad and then a small smile take Jon by the hand on each side and proceed to walk over to where the air bed is.]

Jon: Little Brother, can we display all of this on a monitor. So we can all watch it together.

[A monitor starts lowering down from the ceiling in front of them.]

Little Brother: You'll have to change the cables on the back of the monitor, then yes. I can route to that monitor.

[Jon changes the cables on the back of the monitor and turns it on and the three of them sit there and watch all the bad news. They all fall asleep on the air mattress.]

A sound awakens Jon and the young ladies disappear. He gets up, makes sure that his gun is in place then he proceeds over to where it is more lit. He sees a young lady dressed in what appears to be some type of army fatigue. He stares at her for a little while and then proceeds to walk out into the lit area.

[Melody.]

Jon: So, what is your name, Misty, Melissa or Melody?

The young lady grabs her rifle and points it directly at him.

Jon: Not the welcome I would have expected from my granddaughter.

Melody: I doubt that. I am guessing you're an AI, and they finally figured out how to put skin on themselves.

Jon: Well, I guess we're going to have to do this the hard way. I bet I know a secret, if you follow the family genes you have a birth mark that only your husband would know is there and those breasts of yours are kind of a giveaway also.

[She looks down at her breast. Jon shows, Melody, his arm with the writing on it and she just looks puzzled.]

Melody: Little Brother.

Little Brother: Yes Melody, what can I do for you?

Melody drops the gun starts to run toward him, jumps up and does a bear hug.

Melody: Grandpa, I am guessing that re-image means something like resurrection but in the twisted C's way of thinking and that nuclear physics thing.

Jon: Probably the K's and not the C's, but yes, they loved twisting physics.

[The K's.]

[There is a sound behind him and Melody hops off, and they both turn around. They both see two

young ladies with a wide gray streak in their long dirty blonde hair walking toward them in bright blue jumpsuits.]

Jon: I see 1 set of Spiders named Kay and Kaye, would you like to tell me why we are here? [sarcastically] I'm just DYING to know.

The K's [Spiders]: Hi Jon. We figured when the end of the world comes, you would be able to save it.

[Jon's face becomes angry looking.]

Jon [even more sarcastic]: Oh, no Jon we didn't recreate you so you could visit with the grandchildren and great grand children, get to talk to you those you loved. NO, you saved me for the end of the world. Where is my gun? Oh yes, I have it here with me, I need to see if I can shoot for myself 2 K's.

[The K's take off running in unison until they hear a loud whistle from behind and they stop cold and turn around again in unison.]

Jon [louder]: You know, we are all going to die here, don't you? You might as well get used to the idea now.

[The K's walk back with a very sad look on their face, very much like a guilty little kid. They look up at him.]

The K's: No, you always fix it. You always come up with the impossible and you always seem to make it work.

Jon: Well, is anyone else going to show up now?

The K's: No, just the three of us.

[Big smile on the K's faces.]

The K's: And this must be a mini Misty?

Melody: I can't believe that the three of you think I look so much like my grandmother that you could pick me out in this half lit cave.

The K's [in perfect unison speech]: Yes. You do! Same breast, height, light on the weight, same sharp nose, same dimple in chin and same multicolors of blonde hair.

[The K's have an ear to ear smile.]

Jon: Well, I guess we need to get started. So K's, how much do you know?

The K's: While the three of you were sleeping. We did a fast forward through the last 10 years. It's not good, but you always have a plan. So we can make it all work and we'll help.

[The K's have an ear to ear smile.]

[After WW3.]

Jon: Okay Melody, tell me about what's outside.

Melody: Well most of the major bombing has stopped because they ran out of nuclear warheads. They seem to leave humans alone as long as they are not in packs. If in packs, here comes a missile or 2 of them and they mow down the humans.

We don't know if they are planning a new global type offensive or something else. They can't get into the Main Cave, it disables them. But they do try from time to time and there is a bunch of AI bodies right outside the Entrance Cave entrance. The B's made a decent defense, but it would not hold out against an all-out offensive toward us. When we abandoned the Main Cave, close to 20,000 were headed this way. And there is close to 10,000 of them in the old missile silos and the cave connected to it even now.

But since I was just one person. I don't think they even noticed me. Even though I drove all the way from the Spider Cave in Texas to here. When the war first started, anything that moved, died. The AI's are extremely good at missile attacks and have manufactured 100's of thousands of them. They took down every plane, they blew up every car that was moving for a while. They took out every tank, every airport and every major city. They have military looking stations with 4-6 AI's which did extremely well at cutting down drones too with only 1 or 2 bullets.

I am here because the Main Cave had a power spike, and Liza needed to find out what happened. We were afraid that the nuclear warheads had detonated or the AI's were in here. The AI's also don't seem to come out as much after dark, when it is cold or really hot weather, and we have no clue why.

Jon: They are running low on ammo and battery power.

[The K's look at him, and then smile ear to ear.]

The K's: See a revelation. We need to take one apart, that sounds like poor design.

Jon: I guess we have to get to work. So K's have you done any diagnostic work yet? Melody how were you planning to contact the Spider Cave to tell them you are okay?

Melody: I have a HAM radio. I brought it with me. So far, the AI's don't jam it or just don't care about it or maybe don't know of HAM radio at all, since it was way before their time. We don't know.

Jon: Okay contact them, tell them that everything is just fine here, in fact better than fine. But do not tell them about us.

Melody: Okay grandpa.

Jon: You may not know this but why would they abandoned this cave and say that they can't defend her?

Melody: I was a lot younger then but I remember the B's and C's made a way to stop a lot of the missiles but that would not hold up against a large group of them at one time so they figured they would not be able to stop a full on attack of thousands of them and they were all coming this way at the time, plus we have no air power. They destroyed every scooter with the super high-speed missiles that they made after the war started. They also took out all the Fighter 101's, 102's and the F111's. Also no way to protect the Hydroponics side of the cave. There may be other places too that they could not fortify but I don't know them or can't remember them. It has been a long time and a lot has happened

Jon: Why are you not using the cave to cave communication?

Melody: I don't know what you are talking about.

Jon: K's check it out and make sure it looks good but don't alarm any AI or the Spider Cave yet.

The K's: Yes boss, we are right on it

Jon: Melody you look like trash, you need to take a shower and go to bed; we always have lots of hot water here. We will be here when you wake up in the morning actually is it even morning? Little Brother what time is it?

Little Brother: It is actually 9 PM Central Standard Time.

Jon: Well K's I guess we need to go and look around and see what's here. I am hungry; how about you?

The K's: Yes!

[The three of them go back to the kitchen and grab something to eat. After they are done they go back to the Main Cave and find Melody laying on an air bed asleep. They put a plate of food right next to her head. She wakes up and smiles and proceeds to start eating. Melody comes to the Dining Area and eats another plate full with them.]

Melody: I told Liza what you said. Why do you not want them to know you are here?

Jon: What our enemy doesn't know can't hurt them. Also I need to see what is left here and what we can do about making it all better.

[Melody goes back to bed.]

[Day 2. Location: Entrance Cave. Time: Midnight.]

[The three of them walk out to the Entrance Cave from the Main Cave. It has a large entrance that about 10 trucks could drive through at one time with an extremely high ceiling at the front entrance, so heavy equipment can come inside.

They see two large black solid Disintegrator Walls. One is just barely transparent and the other one is almost totally black. One is located behind the other one and the one that is almost black is covering most of the Main Entrance Cave. These walls look like very thick see-through glass but very dark in color.

Then there is a little screen that's totally see-through right on the edge of the curve of the Main Entrance Cave just big enough for a human to bend some and walk through. The K's walk up to it stick a pencil through it and pull it back through, the metal top is gone and the eraser falls off. The pencil itself is unharmed so they put their finger through it and pull it back; it too is unharmed so they stick their heads outside through this little disintegrator screen and look around in all directions and they bring their heads back in and look over toward Jon.]

The K's: We have lots of dead robots right outside the disintegration screen but they're not harmed other than they look mashed. They look like AI vs. brick wall at high speed.

[Ear to ear smiles; sarcastically.] Oh how sad.

Jon: I think we need to find out what our enemy looks like; really looks like.

[The K's reach behind themselves and grab their organic laptops out of their backpacks. They turned them on and they plug into a port inside a hidden panel that is right next to the screen that they went through. They proceed to power on the laptops sit down on the floor, back to back and start using the laptops.]

Jon: I think I'm going to go back and talk to our shiny little landlords and see if I can figure out a few things I have my phone on me so call me when you have something. I am guessing that the phones still won't go outside this Cave.

The K's: That should be correct. We are going to start checking out everything. We want to make sure that nothing is inside here that we don't know about. I think we have figured out what the two screens are. One will allow the robots to walk in and the second one is to mash them in between the two. And then it ejects them out into the yard. But if you look up at the ceilings you will notice the disintegrator's are already looking worn I can see why they didn't figure this could withstand a full on attack. Maybe you can get our landlords to help us out with this a little bit.

[Remodeling.] [TOC](#)

[Location: Main Cave.]

[Jon rides a golf-cart back to the Main Cave.]

Jon: Where are my shiny little Nobody's?

[The two humanoids start to move downward from the ceiling toward Jon.]

Jon: I need the two of you to do me a large favor and to do repentance for your sin.

[Once they take form, they walk up to him with a sad face and they hug him.]

Jon: We need to redo all the entrances to this place can you do that?

The Nobody's: Yes, you know we can do that.

Jon: I think we need to start with the ballroom first.

The Nobody's: Genny asked us to fix that a long time ago that's not a way in anymore.

[Jon looks sad with watery eyes.]

Jon: Did my wife die well?

The Nobody's: Yes, she missed you a lot but kept herself busy with Cave things and died peaceably before the war.

Jon: That's good news. Okay the Earthen Globe areas, what about them?

[Note: Earthen Globes are mini Suns which are covered with pipes used to scrape off various compounds or elements use for construction and human or plant food.]

The Nobody's: They still spin. The AI's tried a few times but came out of various tubes as elements.

Jon: I always like watching those mini suns spin and all the trash from the dump trucks going in and all be converted to just elements and compounds coming out. Does the plumbing appear to be intact?

The Nobody's: Everything is undisturbed from the Main Cave exodus.

Jon: Good and then the wet cave entrance back into here.

The Nobody's: The bio-city is built over the top of that and AI's cannot enter into the bio-city because they die, just like here.

Jon: So you peeked outside then? Okay how about my 13 missiles?

The Nobody's: Yes, we peeked; it makes us sick. The missiles are still there and the entrance is lined with large crystals, the AI's cannot enter without dying.

Jon: Okay Hydroponics Bay?

The Nobodies: Well, that's sort of a different problem. The outside loading docks are destroyed, and the entrance to those from the cave is a very large wide opening.

[Jon's phone rings, and he answers it.]

Jon: What's up?

The K's: We will be there shortly, we need to talk. All five of us.

[The K's arrived on 2 golf-carts, which appear to be mounted to each other, side-by-side.]

The K's: Hop on, we have a road trip.

Jon: Why do you have 2 of these connected together?

[The K's. Look at each other and start to talk word for word at the same time.]

The K's: Do you really believe that I would trust her to drive me anywhere, she is a maniac.

[Both of them pointing at each other while talking. The Nobodies and Jon laugh a little.]

The K's: Well, come on, what are you waiting for?

[Everyone hops onto the back of one of the linked vehicles.]

Jon: Oops, we need to make sure that Melody has a cave phone.

[They drive by where Melody is sleeping and one of the K's leaves her phone next to her head. Then the K's drive off toward the agricultural part of the cave. The hydroponics gardens, all look good but a lot of it is overgrown and a lot of it is dead, but they do manage to grab a few pieces of fruit on the way through. When they get to the end of the agricultural part of the cave. They stand on the edge of what was the loading dock where the planes and scooters used to load up. They look out into a wide open area. The entire hole is larger than the Entrance Cave opening. Some of the rail lines above them are hanging down.]

Jon: I wonder why external defenses didn't work?

The K's: We noticed something very strange in the films that we watched of the Main Cave. The AI's had missiles that were faster than our external defenses could shoot them down. But they didn't send them inside once they blew the backside 3 story docking bays and buildings to rubble. We are not war dogs, but that seems stupid to us. They had everybody here at a serious disadvantage and probably could have tried to at least kill everyone.

But then, strange too, the Octopi should have been able to stop all of the high speed missiles and send them back out. We are very confused. Neither thought makes sense.

Jon: I think I need you to see if you can upgrade the external defenses. Maybe there's something they missed that you can figure out. Let's take a walk to the lower levels. There doesn't seem to be damage from what I can tell.

[The 3 of them, as they are walking down the stairs underneath the floor that is full of rubble, are constantly looking around for cracks or things that might fall on top of them. They go down multiple levels, and do not find anything disrupted or broken underneath the main levels which covered the extremely large entrance.]

Jon: I am very confused too. There is something here they want, that they could not take a chance of destroying. I would have put 50 high speed nuclear warheads through this gaping hole.

[Looking at the Nobodies, Jon has a kind of puzzled look on his face.]

Jon: Can the two of you raise all the bottom floors of this structure to cover up the entrance. Very much like it was in the old days? Then can you just slowly close all of this hole but a window like area. K's give them how you want it to be to put in another Disintegration Screen so we can still fly scooters out through here.

[The two Nobodies look at each other and you can tell that they are telepathically talking to each other.]

The Nobodies: Yes we can. There is lots of granite below us.

Jon: You need to do it very slowly, so we don't draw too much attention to ourselves.

[The two Nobodies smile and hug him and then vanish. They hear noise behind him, then they turn around and look at Melody.]

Melody: I tracked you with the cell phone to see where you were in the cave. Now, I think you can see why they abandoned.

The K's: We are confused. Why did the Octopi not just stop the missiles?

Melody: I remember the parlor tricks the Octopi did when I was a kid. They don't have those abilities anymore, they can barely lift up large objects with their minds. Very few of them can even amp up, whatever that means. The spiders work very slowly these days. Otherwise they would kill themselves without the Octopi being able to take care of them properly. The current spiders are barely faster than humans.

The K's: Something is totally wrong here; Sexpot lived 4000 years. And Jamie and Bam Bam, almost as long. Something is off. It sounds like everyone is sick. We need an Octopi, and we need some spiders to test. I wish we had the B's.

Jon: Okay, let's go back. They may have gotten rid of our satellites. But we have another way to watch them.

[They travel back to the lit part of the Main Cave and Jon points toward what used to be his Lounge and bedroom.]

Jon: I think it's time to feed the Table. K's did you find out how much inventory we have by chance? Please tell me the AI's don't have it or the cave dwellers didn't destroy it.

The K's: We did a rough check. We are locked out of some of the systems so we cannot tell about

everything. We have a good idea that by most of the evidence, all of it is here, except for what has probably been spent over the past 21 or so years.

Jon: Locked out on this system, how?

The K's: We designed it that way, because the C's and B's are in charge now.

Melody: The B's are dead and the C's are just worthless.

[The K's have a very concerned look on their faces.]

The K's: That's sad, but the C's are worthless?

Melody: The C's are extremely depressed, and they don't do anything except eat, Liza has been attempting to get them out of their depression. But nothing seems to work, because they're immune to antidepressants.

The K's: The C's have a much larger problem now, it's called the K's.

Melody: I really hope that you can fix them. We desperately need them. Actually we need all of them fixed, I think everything is broken in the Kingdom, grandpa.

Jon: Okay, we have limited horsepower. I will deal with the cooking. Melody, do you know how to run a front end loader? I will need you to feed the table a bunch of crystals, look for the pile of broken ones, usually the small pile or piles next to a much larger pile.

[The K's look at the ceiling next to the walls and then throw off their shoes and walk over next to the walls and start climbing up the walls barehanded and barefooted with no supports. Melody looks at them in awe.]

Melody: I forgot they could do that.

Jon: That is why they call themselves spiders, 2 bodies, 1 mind with 8 arms and legs.

[Once the K's reached the top wall where the ceiling meets, they pull open a door and a Gatling gun like machine falls out. They flip over and land on the ground on all fours, just like a cat would.

Melody is standing in awe once again.]

The K's: Little Brother, are the internal defenses powered and on?

Little Brother: Yes, they are, they have been since everyone evacuated.

The K's: Do the internal defenses kill AI's?

Little Brother: The 50 caliber's do, but the lasers have little effect.

The K's: Thank you, Little Brother.

Little Brother: You're welcome, K's.

[They load up on the golf-carts and head back toward the Main Cave.]

[Location: Main Cave.]

Jon: What time is it?

The K's: It's late morning.

Jon: Melody do you know where the stockpile of broken crystals are located?

Melody: Yes, I used to play in them with the fairy girls. Yes, I do know how to run a front end loader.

Jon: K's can you help me to find out if the Silver bathtub is still there.

The K's: That sounds bad, are you planning to sleep there?

Jon: I think I better leave that option open if I need to use it.

The K's: We will go see if it is full. We will grab you and put you in it.

We can't help your Silver level with the Lounge area in ruin.

Jon: How long have the two of you been up?

The K's: 36 hours.

Jon: Are you dosing?

[A strange look on the K's faces as they look at each other face to face.]

Jon: You know, that I know how to put in an IV, would you like me to show you?

The K's: Okay, okay we will go to bed with you.

[The K's walk over into a non-lighted area close to where they were at and pickup 2 steel plates with hooks that were made in them like manhole covers. They reach their arms down into what appears to be a tube of some kind and when they pulled their hands back up from there they are coated in what looks to be silver paint. Then they stick their hands back down into the tub and bring them back up and the Silver is gone. The K's flip over a large plate to expose a giant area of Silver. Then the K's go over to Jon, pickup Jon, and proceed to carry him over to the Silver and everyone gets undressed and in the pool.]

Melody takes one of the golf-carts over to an extremely large pile of crystals in the part known as the Black Cave

[A cave that has shiny pitch black walls like freshly broken coal which appear to be moving all the time.]

Melody turns on a little device that is setting there; then takes one of the crystals and bangs it against the top of the device. The machine has a bright red light that flashes on. She smiles. She does a few more the same way and the same thing happens, a red light. Then she looks around and sees what she thinks is the front end loader and walks over toward it. When she gets there, she gets on it, turns on the electric engine and the propane engine and goes to grab a bucket full of crystals. Then she drives back to the old Lounge and Bedroom areas and dump them on the crystal floor. Melody turns on the front end loader's light bar and sees that the Floor Table, Lounge, Bedroom, and the Main Table Alcove is all one solid crystal structure.]

Melody: Wow. That makes my life easier, just dump anywhere.

[Then Melody turns around and drives back again and again. Each time she returns, the pile is gone or shorter than it was when she left, and each time she has a big smile on her face. She stops when she comes back and the pile is the same size. She turns off the front end loader and notices the smell of food. She walks back toward the kitchen and she sees 5 people standing there. As soon as she gets close, 2 vanish.]

[Location: Kitchen Dinning Area. Noon.]

Melody: What just happened? I saw five of you. Now I see three of you?

Jon: Okay ladies come on back down.

[The two Nobody's come floating down.]

Jon: Melody, let me introduce to you the Cave. This is Me-Tis and this is Mu-Tis.

[Melody looking very confused.]

Melody: I don't know that I've ever met these beings.

Jon: These young ladies, you might know by their other form. If you would be so kind ladies?

[Me-Tis and Mu-Tis change into very small versions of themselves. And they climb up onto the shoulders of the K's.]

Melody: Yes, I remember these they were called monkeys, at least by Sexpot and Lesa.

Jon: Ladies, she was only a teenager when the exodus occurred. You don't need to hold anything against her.

Melody: Hold what against me?

Jon: When all of you left, no one even said goodbye to them or invited them to come and visit.

Melody: I remember they were on Sexpot's and Lesa's shoulders, and something happened and Lesa and Sexpot had to go deal with a emergency or something. And I am not for sure what, and I don't know what happened after that. But I am so sorry and I want to apologize for everyone of my brethren. We would never ever leave anyone behind, if we would have thought about it. I don't know what happened. I don't remember much of that day, most of my childhood is blurred.

The Nobodies: Thank you.

Melody: You 2 can talk. I didn't know that you 2 could talk.

[The Nobodies smile.]

The Nobodies: Yes we can talk, we just generally don't talk very often and really don't choose to do it very often.

The K's: They just talk to Jon all the time. They're actually very very talkative little girls.

Jon: Well, here is lunch ladies.

Everyone: Thanks.

Melody: It looks good and smells good, and I'm hungry.

Jon: And now that I know the Hydroponics section is good. I have lots of desert. I also found a special dessert ice cream.

[After everyone eats, Jon goes to one of the freezers and picks out a quart container of ice cream that has a special label on the top of it. It's 2 T's. He also grabs out another quart of what looks to be normal ice cream. He grabs a fruit filled pie and proceeds to carry it all back over to the table.]

Melody: I hate to be the bearer of really bad news, but the AI's are mounting an attack on the Spider Cave in Texas. It is going to happen in less than six months. I don't know what Liza is planning to do. We may fight or we may just disperse, I don't know.

Jon: K's, is the secure line secure?

The K's: Yes, but we will test it as we use it. So how are you going to convince Liza that we are not AI's too? Mini Misty wasn't that hard.

Jon: I know a few secrets about her that only I know.

[Everyone is Sick.] [TOC](#)

[Jon scoops out some of the ice cream onto the top of the pie, and proceeds to give it to everyone.

The K's and the Nobodies, are smiling about every bite that they take. Melody takes a bite and then spits it out.

The K's look real concerned. Then they proceed to take a spoon, and they take a chunk of the ice cream that was called TT and they give it to her and she spits it out too.

Melody: It burns, that sounds stupid. It's just ice cream.

The K's: Not exactly. It has a special ingredient and that can only be produced by spiders, who are nursing. Jon something is seriously wrong here, and we need to figure it out.

[The K's, grab their plates and leave. You can hear the golf-cart leaving in the background. Jon scrapes off the TT's ice cream onto his plate and the others continue eating. Jon has a very concerned look on his face as he looks over at his granddaughter.

The K's return, they grab Melody and center her on the back of the golf-cart and take off. Jon gets on the other golf-cart and follows. The Nobodies fly through the air following too. They arrive at the disintegration screen.]

The K's: Okay Mini Misty take off your clothes and walk through the screen.

Melody: We can't walk through the screens; they kill us, unless they are set way down.

The K's: But the screens let everything organic through you walked through one to get in here.

Melody: But that one is set way down, the only thing that doesn't get through that one is metal objects. The AI's don't bend well enough to walk through it, either.

The K's: I'm sorry this is going to hurt.

[The K's take her hand fold it up except for one finger, and they stick the finger through the disintegration screen and pull it back.]

Melody: Yes, that hurts. Look at my finger it is all bloody.

[One of the K's takes what appears to be a handkerchief and wipes off her little finger. The other K, takes out her cell phone puts it on the disintegration screen, and it beeps. The two K's, look at each other and then they turn around and look at everybody else.]

The K's: We are going to analyze this information. I don't know if they've been poisoned by the AI's overtime or this is just from all the radiation that is in all the contaminated food or atmosphere and anything else that might be laying around that has decayed in the first 5 years or so.

Jon: 10 years is everything but 2 man-made elements, correct? Did the two of you get anywhere on improving the air missile situation?

The K's: Yes. We grabbed a soil sample; it is non-radioactive. Yes we did redo the defenses. It appears to be an oversight that the C's made and we are shocked that somebody else didn't catch it. But then, in a war, things don't work exactly the way you'd think. We need workers, and we don't have any.

[The internal defenses turn on.]

Little Brother: We have a woman intruder, who has a dead chip in her butt cheek. She does not have the proper Crystal amount either. She is at the front entrance.

[Everyone gets up. They get on the golf-carts and head toward the Main Entrance Cave. Me-Tis and Mu-Tis disappear.]

[Cindy.]

[Location: Entrance Cave, close to entrance door way.]

[When they arrived there, a woman who looks dirty and sickly is there.]

The woman: We had a surge of power, and figure you were back. I am Cindy, I am from the Bio-City in town. My people would never ask for help, but I am asking you all, if possible, can you help us. We can work for you or do whatever you need?

The K's: Well, God does provide.

[The K's proceed to look this woman over from top to bottom front and back.]

Cindy: Please, can you help us?

Jon: How many are in the Bio-City?

Cindy: Almost 1000.

Jon: Did the AI's pay any attention to you coming here?

Cindy: I kind of snuck in. The AI's also took note of the surge of power. They appear to be going back to the silos after making some rounds of everything outside. But the AI's don't seem to be paying as much attention to us anymore. They used to mow us down with those guns that are built into their arms. They truly wanted to make us extinct.

The K's: Can your people work?

Jon: K's, are you really going to go there?

The K's: We are sorry.

Cindy: Yes, we can work, we will do anything for food. Our hydroponics is depleted, and a lot of our plants don't produce much anymore. Then when we tried to grow fields of crops if an AI finds them, they usually missile them. So we have started growing smaller gardens, but they are not anywhere near bloom or eatable yet.

Jon: We will help you, but right now we are attempting to figure out a way to solve the AI problem that's in front of our door.

[The K's proceed to take off their backpacks and attach them to Cindy on the front and back of her.]

The K's: We will be back.

Jon: My name is Jon, this is Melody, and the two who left are the K's. Do you want to eat? Then follow us. Little Brother, please scan her, is there anything special about her?

Little Brother: Already done, no reason to not believe her.

Jon: Is she armed?

Little Brother: A small knife only.

Cindy: We have very little ammo, and they don't know I left. The ammo does nothing against the AI's. They will find the letter I left.

[Everyone goes back to the kitchen and Jon grabs some more food off the stove puts it on a plate and hands it to her. She closes her eyes and bows her head to pray and then proceeds to start eating.]

Cindy: Thank you, thank you.

Jon: Slow down or you will puke it all back up.

[With both jaws full, she attempts to smile at him]

Jon: There is more on the stove help yourself and the refrigerator is right here. There is lots of fruit.

[Jon's phone rings.]

Jon: Yes.

The K's: Are you in the kitchen? Just making sure the internal GPS is correct.

Jon: Yes, we are.

[The K's arrive with a box each. They open the boxes, and they start to take out the contents and put them in her backpack. Then they turn her around in the chair, and they proceeded to pack the front backpack.]

The K's: Okay, stand up Cindy, make sure that you can actually walk and carry all this. You don't look all that healthy and are too skinny for your build.

Cindy: Yes, I can carry this. It is just a little heavy, but I can manage.

[The K's take the gun type syringe and shoot a vial of liquid into her arm. Then pack the syringe in one of the backpacks. The K's steady Melody because she is a little wobbly.]

The K's: These containers go in it. Make sure every single person gets a shot until you run out. This is what we call go-juice. It is every vitamin and mineral that humans needs, and some concentrated protein enzymes.

Cindy: How many people are here?

Jon: A handful. That's all.

[Cindy's face just looks sad.]

Cindy: Is this all that's left of the Foundation?

Jon: No, most of them moved to the other cave.

Cindy: You look a lot like Jon Smyth, are you a relation? There is a statue in the Bio-City of him.

Jon: You might say that. [Rolling his eyes, like 'You got to be kidding'.]

The K's: We are going to give you these glasses. They will allow you to be able to see in the dark, so that you can get back to the city. Slowly get your people to come here.

Melody: You can travel in no more than 4 people at a time, you can even travel on a motorcycle or in a car or whatever but don't try to run from the AI's or they will shoot you. Just stay at the same speed and stay on course. The AI's will ignore you.

Cindy: Thank all of you so much.

[The K's walk over to one of the monitors on the wall and proceed to change the cables on the back.]

The K's: Little Brother, can you display a quick look at our hydroponics garden. Thank you.

[Cindy looks at the monitor with a drooling sort of look and turns around and looks at them, smiles and proceeds back to the front to a golf-cart.]

Cindy: May I borrow this to get back to the entrance?

Jon: Yes, you may, we will see you soon, pay close attention to what Melody said. We don't want any of you dead. Is the main road to the city open at all?

Cindy: The one to the old city is intact, but the one to Bio-City goes right by the AI's encampment about 300 yards from here. You can see for the trees. I walked from Bio-City along the road till I angle into the woods and then when I come to the main road come here. Thanks again.

[Cindy gets on the golf-cart and proceeds to leave.]

Melody: Little Brother, please tell Cindy that Melody has a little bit more to say, Do not use the same path each time you come here. If it's no more than walk around a few trees, walk across the road to look at something, take a rest on the ground or road or even retrace yourself.

Little Brother: I told her.

Melody: Thank you, Little Brother.

Jon: The Nobodies, come on down.

[The Nobodies float down, and they proceed to climb on the backs of the two K's.]

Jon: Are the two of you better now and can you take care of yourselves?

[The Nobodies look sad, and then they smile and have a bright glowing face and they kind of bounce up and down as they nod yes. And the K's smile from ear to ear and reach back and tickle the Nobodies; then the Nobodies disappear.]

Melody: I just realized their names are Greek for "no one" or "not someone" or something like that, am I correct?

Jon: Yes, you are correct. Little Brother please show me the hydroponics garden from the outside of the cave structure.

[The monitor shows that the building is now taller and the great big hole is covered up now with building.]

{Nobodies telepathically to All: We will close it when the sun shines on it and remodel the entrance when the sun shines on it.}

Jon: Well ladies, we need to fix the external defenses so that they can shoot down these faster little missiles.

[They all start walking out toward the Main Cave, where it is lit, but before they get there the K's stop. Walk up to the American flag that is on the Blast Wall [A gigantic sliding door actually]. They reach in their pockets, and they both grab out a couple of nut drivers.]

The K's: Jon, are you going to spank us for keeping secrets from you?

Jon: Under the circumstances, probably not.

[Underneath this gigantic flag on the sliding doors are large stripes of red, white and blue. The K's proceed to take off a bunch of the bolts and peel back part of the door and a large quantity of what appears to be cobalt colored gems hit the floor with some clear ones missed in.]

Jon: You sneaky little machines. You hid them in plain view.

The K's: Yes we did; we are naughty little spiders.

Jon: So what are your plans with those?

The K's: We are planning to make multiple Gravity Wells where the Main Entrance was so that way we can catch anything and everything that is shot toward us. The whole area is going to look very differently soon. We already let the Nobodies know what we need, and they said they will have it done as they said when the sun shines on it which is very soon now. Then they will do the same to the Hydroponics Garden entrance at dawn. So if you don't mind, we need to take a bunch of this door apart.

Jon: I will go get 2 or 3 wheel barrels and load them on one of the golf-carts. I will see you shortly, and I will grab some more nut drivers, what size?

The K's: 17 mm. But you don't need to, you forgot there is a toolbox in each golf-cart under the rear seat. But if you go to the Curved Cave, we have electric tools and maybe a mineral cart.

Jon: Then I will just have to check that out. I guess I am used to that being too full of spiders.

[Jon takes off in the golf-cart. Melody goes to another golf-cart grabs her a 17 mm socket and ratchet then proceeds back and starts helping the K's. Take the blue stripe off of the wall.

Jon arrives back with 2 daisy chained carts and a couple of shovels and proceeds to start scraping up all the cobalt colored gems into one of the carts.]

Jon: Since we are going to be having guests, I noticed something strange and convenient. We have close to 10 full-size freezers full of zombie omelettes. They are not very tasty until you add salt, but they are definitely nutritious.

The K's: Did you look in all the freezers?

Jon: I haven't had much chance to do it yet. I didn't look at any of them in the hydroponics garden at all. I found more than enough for us to eat. So I didn't worry about it. Even now we probably have 2 months with all our new visitors.

The X marked on top is rotten.

The K's: If we can get about six turrets reprogrammed and the remodeling that the Nobodies are doing now and tomorrow. We will be ready for war.

Melody: You are kidding aren't you?

The K's: Spiders don't lie, and you can always tell when we are kidding.

[The K's have their usual ear to ear smile. Melody has a smile ear to ear with a slight devious look.]

The K's: Boss, do you have a nuclear surprise for the 10,000 AI's that are squatting on our property?

Jon: Why would you think me that paranoid?

The K's: As Sexpot once said, 'I am so glad I work for a boss who is paranoid', when she was looking at 500 people with guns looking at her as a target.

Jon: Two of those actually, I don't think we need more than one.

[Cindy's Parents.] [TOC](#)

[Location: Entrance Cave.]

[Two people walked through the disintegration screen at the front entrance. An older man and woman.]

Little Brother [over all the PA speakers]: You may proceed, follow the yellow brick road.

[Some lights shine down on the floor, and all of a sudden an image of a yellow brick road is displayed, going forward for them to the lit part of the Main Cave.]

Little Brother: Jon, we have some guests, an older couple, heading your way; estimation Cindy's

parents.

[Shortly thereafter, the couple arrive, where everyone else is sitting at the outside edge of the Dinning Area.]

The couple: I am Larry and my wife Kelly. We went looking for our daughter and she told us to come here and she is continuing on to the Bio-City. Thank you for your help.

Jon: Do you all know how to cook?

The couple: Yes we do, we will be more than happy to help anyway we can.

Jon: Well, follow me. I will introduce you to the kitchen. I am Jon by the way. Those are the K's in blue, and Melody is in the camo.

[Location: Kitchen.]

Jon: Here are the freezers which contains the zombie omelettes put salt on them or they taste really weird. Here is the power on to use the automatic chain boiler to serve the omelettes. Just throw them on and out the other side they are good and hot with cheese and other goodies popping out, but salt them ahead of time and they may need some more at the end.

We need to get to the Hydroponics before the lights, sorry hurry this way.

[Location: Hydroponics Bay.]

Jon: I hope the two of you are good at dictating orders. You will need to get people to take care of this mess, to pick some of the fruit and then cleanup part of this because there's a lot of us who are going to need fed soon. Also, are there any of you who are mechanically inclined? We will need those people to help us repair some things around here. Within the next few days, we are planning to kill a whole lot of AI's.

[Ester.]

Kelly: EEEE. Those eyes are looking at me.

Jon: Hi Ester. I was wondering if you were here or not. The lights are starting. The 2 of you need to leave the area quickly, the K's are closing the Blast Wall. There is a path right here back to the Kitchen; get some food but don't eat too fast. Air mattresses are usually against outer walls so you can make a place to sleep. Don't come back to this area till morning. I am going to talk with Ester, I will be fine here. If you see the K's, please tell them I am here and call me.

Larry: Thank you. We need to hurry honey, before it is too bright to see.

Kelly: Thank you so much.

Jon: You're welcome.

[Location: Kitchen Area.]

[The couple take the path back to the kitchen.]

[The couple then smell the food and get out some food. After they eat, they look and see the showers, the bathrooms and all the rest of the kitchen facilities. The couple grabs some air beds and inflate them. Larry sees Melody and walks over to her.]

Larry: Jon said he is staying in the Hydroponics area and wants the K's to call him when you see them. Jon was staying to talk to Ester.

Melody: I am running this load to them now and I will tell them. Did you get something to eat? Oh, Little Brother please direct all humans who might show up tonight to the kitchen area. Larry, if you

can, would you set out the fruit from the frig so they have something to eat. Little Brother, please confine them to the Kitchen Dinning area. If they roam, they will never be found again alive.

[Location: Hydroponics Bay.]

Jon: Hi Ester, you look bad. Let me see if I can find some liquid fertilizer.

[The whole Hydroponics bay is now lit from the remodeling at the Loading Dock Area. Jon sees a cart with jugs on it, all with various labels and rolls it over to the Ester.]

{The K's telepathically to Jon: Hi, glad you found Ester, she will help a lot.

Jon to K's: I wonder if there is any bio matter in the Earthen Globes? I have a very starved Ester here. Glad our telepathy is working. Or these tubes are plugged which send the Bio-vitamin this way.

The K's to Jon: We will check. The Nobodies in your realm, we presume?

Uh, [long pause] they put in auto-loaders for Black Hole Trash Marbles. I hope they left them full. We will go that way in one of the go-carts and sleep there; just in case. Good luck.

Jon: Yes the remodeling is going well from what little I can tell. Bye kids. }

[5 minutes later. The Bio-vitamin starts flowing in the tubes. Jon has his eyes wrapped with a vine so he can see. Jon finds a latch that opens a clean out hole and opens it so the chunks of Bio-vitamin starts flowing out the clean out port close to where Jon and Ester are.]

Jon: Green eyes, I don't have a clue which one of these is the jug best for you so have them all.

[Jon opens up the jugs and starts pouring them in the reservoirs that are designed just for feeding to a section extra nutrients. Jon hops up on the water canal wall and looks directly into Ester's eyes.]

Jon: 1 blink for yes. 2 blinks for no. Was those jugs good for you?

[Ester blinks once. Jon walks over to another cart and he sees and it has jugs on it too. Then Jon sees one more cart full and goes to it and on the way back adds all the jugs to the same cart. As he is going one jug hits the floor so, he just throws it in the canal and keeps going back to Ester. Jon jumps up on the canal and starts holding up 2 jugs at a time where Ester can see the labels.]

Jon: If any are no's. Let me know otherwise I am dumping them all.

[Jon ends up dumping all of them but 1 he only does half.]

[1 hour later.]

Melody: Grandpa where are you?

Jon: Right turn and look up.

Melody: That really looks weird. Are you okay?

Jon: I am perfectly fine. In the morning I will look very pinkish because all of my dead skin cells and all will be gone. This actually feels great. I like the welding goggles.

Melody: I brought you a pair but not sure how to get them on you with all the vines. Wow, it is raining.

Jon: Loose the clothes and come on in. Then we both will be pinkish tomorrow.

Melody: Don't look.

Jon: I already know exactly what you look like, down to the mole at where your tear drop butt starts.

Melody: Which side then?

Jon: Right is my gene. Left is Misty's gene. Would you like me to describe much more, because I really can't close my eyes with this plant film over them.

Melody: Sure this is okay?

Jon: It actually might be really good for you since we know you are very impure right now because

of all the poison or whatever caused it.

Melody: Okay. I came here because I realized I have never slept alone. I usually slept with the spiders, Mom and Grandma though my whole life.

Jon: Step up on the Canal wall and then face away from the plants.

Melody: Wow, they are pulling me in. OOOO.

Jon: Great timing, your period will give her some blood. Remind me to check the blood bank. It is rotten now for human use but Ester might call it food. Goodnight kid.

Melody: This is super relaxing. Goodnight Grandpa.

[Day 3. Location Hydroponics Bay. Time: 6:30 AM.]

The K's: I see you 2 are enjoying yourselves.

Jon: I wonder why I have nightmares at night, oh it is not a nightmare but the K's.

[Melody grunts.]

The K's: Mini Misty can't talk. Interesting, she is all hooked up with plant IV's.

[The K's are really looking all over the situation: she is all wrapped up with vines.]

{Jon telepathically to Melody: Don't wiggle or try to talk. I will let you talk with Ester, she is sort of back.

Ester to Melody: What kind of drugs did you do as a teenager? You are a complete mess inside? What have you been eating or snorting into your body or were you into body piecing and garbage jewelry?

Melody to Ester: Nuclear war remember?

Ester: Oh. Sorry, it takes a while before I get my memories all back, I need more human material. Not to be uncaring but I need someone who just died or a living person you need dead.

Melody to Jon: Why can't I move? Hi grandpa, I can see you.

Jon: Wow this is amazing. You're a plant now, just kidding. Actually Ester is cleaning out all the trash in your body. If you are feeling any pain, I can get some Euphoria for you. Wait.

[Jon bends down and grabs a handful of dust on the Canal wall and sprinkles it front of Melody's eyes.]

Jon: This all came out of you. See what I mean? I know this is extremely weird but this is probably the best thing that could happen to you right now, if you can bear it for a little longer. I will let you follow me around today in the 'spiritual sense', okay?

Melody: Okay Grandpa. I know you are wiser than I am. I am feeling some pain but I don't need Euphoria, aspirin would be fine.

Jon: Euphoria is better, but I will drop the doze, okay.

Melody: Okay.

Ester: Bring back one of those vials of Silver, Lesa would inject into new Octopi. You're granddaughter is following the family tradition.

Melody: I am an Octopi? Wow.

Jon: I wondered how she could ever be human. I was guessing mommy picked really super bad genes.

Melody: Mom and dad died accidently when I was just a kid, before the AI's.

K's: How about 2 bodies put in Crystals just after death?

Ester: That sounds yummy. Sorry that sounds sick.

K's: We have Euphoria in the med kit. How much Ester.

Ester: Full doze. I can not clean out her liver, intestines and kidneys; the pain would kill Melody.

K's: Goodnight Melody, we unhook you tomorrow.

[The K's shoot her with the syringe.]

Jon: Melody is out.

K's: We will bring you your bodies. But we should not let the humans see them; they will freak out.
Hum.

Ester: You could grind them up into meat, bones, hair, everything, if you have a way and leave in a cart.

K's: We will hook you up. Take care of Mini Misty for us. Bye.

[2 hours later Cindy drives in a golf cart with a dirt cart attached full of what appears to be hamburger and sets it on the floor in front of Ester. Cindy jumps up on the Canal wall and looks at Ester.]

Cindy [non-believing]: Hi Ester. The K's wanted me to give you this raw hamburger meat and put some of your vines in it, okay?

[A vine comes in between them holding a cherry and offers it to Cindy. Cindy takes it and eats it. The expression on her face is pure delight. Then more vines come out and stays in the air around her. Cindy jumps off the Canal and grabs about 3 of the vines and puts them in the meat. Then the vines start coming out from all over the area and go into the cart. The vines and plants start making noise that is like a very soothing hum. Cindy stands in awe. The buds start appearing on some of the vines. The Bio-vitamin in a fairly large pile slowly starts disappearing. Cindy steps back and just keeps watching.]

Cindy: Thank you. This is beautiful. Hi Melody, are you awake?

[Melody opens her eyes but can't talk. Cindy jumps up on the wall and touches her forehead to Melody's.]

{Cindy telepathically to Melody: Hi, are you feeling better?

Melody to Cindy: I am completely numb but I can smell really well now, so yes I am feeling better. How do you speak telepathically?

Cindy to Melody: I discovered this by accident when 2 of us teenagers knocked ourselves out, after colliding together in basketball. Do you need any of your medicine, it is laying here on the wall?

Melody to Cindy: Silver vial?

Cindy to Melody: Yes.

Melody to Cindy: No. Very carefully put that vial in the empty bucket below my feet. That vial of medicine would kill you if you were to be injected with it. Thanks. I smell flowers, apples, something weird almost like perfume. I have never been able to smell well. This is great, thanks; Ester if you are hearing me.}

Ester [aloud]: You are welcome, about 4 more hours and I have done all that I can do. That meat is so good. Jon are you in here?

Jon: What's up? Need something?

Ester: How is your Silver?

Jon: Low, the K's are going to help me with that later. Are you mobile yet?

Ester: After the bright light starts up tonight, if you want to bring a vial of Silver I can help get you to a high level again.

Jon: The timing might not be really great for that; I will try my best.

Cindy: I almost forgot. Jon sent some spoiled blood and wondered if you want to taste it?

[Long pause.] I am putting a vine in now.

Ester: Yummy. Sorry that sounds sick. I am half human, half plant. Please pour all of it on top of the

hamburger. Do you see a white jug labeled Broccoli? Please pour it in the hamburger too.

[Long pause.]

[The hum almost sounds like a melody to a song. Cindy is in awe again.]

Cindy: They use to say Gods lived here.

Ester: They do and did, but they were all false gods. People are stupid they love to worship their human heros. So it is easy for the joke heros to delude the people into doing anything the heros want or believe in, and the people feel good about being totally used. The biggest jokes of all were movie stars and show hosts. I know; I did it for centuries. Remember FAN is short for fanatic, you do well. Fake gods always lie to promote their agendas or delude the masses into believing the lie.

[Location Entrance Cave. Time: Noon.]

Jon: I have the old wall back up with some help from our new friends. I have been trying to get an idea of the characters of those coming in. I wish I had Kala, Mey or Kalla here to do this. How did you pull off the hamburger?

The K's: Remember the punishment grinder?

Jon: Yes. [Laughing.]

Yes I remember that the beasties had a hog one time that was just mean. It rammed one of them and broke a leg and they stuck it in nose first, fur and all; they were so mad! The beastie pups loved the mix so well, they started doing it for them on a regular basis. You know we have some really great memories here.

The K's: AI's all dead will be another one soon. Thank you Ms. Nobodies for setting in all the cobalts and rubies. We are ready for war once we get the loading dock fixed. So about 4 PM you can do whatever makes our enemies have bad memories.

Jon: It is a work of art ladies, all 4 of you.

The K's: We are lucky in that some of the men and ladies are very mechanically inclined. We need to go check on them first, before we go to the Hydroponics and tickle Mini Misty.

[Location: Hydroponics Bay. Time 1 PM.]

The K's: Hi Mini Misty. We were planning to tickle you.

Ester: She is out. She will be free about the time you are done. Would you quarantine the area after you have your meeting with Jon later and turn on the bright lights again. They are so simulating, and tell Jon to come here after they are on please then you can have him.

K's: We will keep telepathically talking as we go to work but the human population is at 250 now, the front entrance has a complete redo very much smaller now. And there is a moat lined with Cobalts, and we have embedding Cobalts in the ceiling. Humans are bringing in the extra large crystals and moving them into a dump truck, parked right outside the Main Entrance. The humans are starting to bring in the crushed robots and putting them on tables for us to examine.

Hi humans. If the light gets too bright go on back to the Kitchen and Dinning Area, and we will let you know when we are done. At about 6 PM tonight make sure no one comes this way the bright light could blind you permanently. Also you might want to work here in 3's, this way when one is going for something there are still 2 left behind. The Isis plants are very hormonal, especially now. If they wrap around you, just rub them like you would your pet dog and they will leave. IF they don't, have your friend light a lighter and hold it close but NOT on one of the vines. IF you burn the vine, the Isis plant might choke you to dead. They are very much alive just like us humans. They are great

pets and later you will see them do amazing things with this garden.
Woman: I think some of us already have. Thanks for the warnings.

[Bright lights from the far end starts flickering.]

The K's: We are late. Bye.

[The K's, flip down their welding shield and drive the golf-cart and dirt cart filled with gems to the end of the Hydroponics Bay.]

[Location: Dinning Area. Time 2 PM.]

Jon: Everyone I need your attention. Do not go exploring! If the area is too dark to see in, don't be there. These caves cover thousands of square miles. We might find your bones in 500 years. The only consistent problems we had with humans is they get sticky fingers. There are too many things people like to steal because they used to be valuable like gold and this pretty rocks I have here. These gloves and vest I am wearing are protection up to 40,000 volts. Watch what happens when I attempt to steal some rocks.

[Jon pour some of the cobalt and ruby diamonds together and then holds up a piece of angle iron. Lightning hits the angle iron at 2 feet away. Jon then pours the gems back into the gem cart he has on the back of the golf-cart he has been driving around. The rim of the golf car glows red hot and then slowly goes back to normal.]

Jon: These same rocks in different combinations could explode and literally kill everyone in this dinning room. Leave you curiosities in your empty pockets. Anyone steals and gets caught we feed you to the AI's. Sorry to be so harsh but we can't have enemies inside of our midst. Any questions?

Kelly: Little Brother, do you watch everything everywhere?

Little Brother: I will allow that question from an unauthorized person. Yes I do. Example, you were in the bathroom from 9:33 to 9:38 AM today; then again at 11:01 AM to 11:14 AM. You should be back to one about 3:05 PM if you follow yesterdays pattern.

[Location Entrance Cave. Time 4:15 PM.]

[The K' are doing one last inspection outside the cave and they jump down but too close to the Gravity Well and stay in mid air. They act like they are swimming but not going anywhere.]

Jon: Here, grab the rope you crazy geniuses.

[Once they grab the rope, Jon gives it one hard tug. They come flying out of the blue gem area and land on their feet.]

The K's: Someone is stealing our electricity. We should be able to fire the laser cannon on auxiliary power with the minimum amount of load on the reactors right now with lighting and minimum kitchen.

The Earthen Globes are self contained. Big Brother is self contained and the Ballroom. Atlantean Globes are dead. The Kitchen should be using 10-11% and night lighting only in the Main Cave another 10% at most. If we had an Octopi we could flip to daylight and leave it on. Internal self defense is less than 1% until it is firing. Hydroponics is almost self contained power. Which later we need to get an Earthen Globe and Hydroponics synced.

Ester wants you later, a lot and probably for the next 22 days.

Jon: Oh. I guess that make sense. This is literally her Springtime. She wants kids to help.

[The AI Inside.] [TOC](#)

Jon: Just marvelous. We have to deal with one problem at a time. Ready to dissect our enemy?

The K's: Yes once we get on our head gear the tools are already here.

Jon: Be careful they might have bombs inside or other tricks.

The K's: We thought of that and once they get the gamma ray machine here, we will see just what they look like on the inside first.

[A fork lift comes with something that looks like a CAT scanner but smaller. The K's plug the power cable into the wall in a strange looking plug. The K's watch the monitor and slowly put an AI through.]

The K's: Just as we expected. They are really not much inside.

Jon: What?

The K's: We will rewind and show you. Head is typical infrared and light sensors with telescoping internal lens at 4k. Sound like anything you invented? The entire back side from head to waist is photo cells. They are far sighted or at least this model is. These little lines here that kind of look like tendons around the various joints are cables. This is the hydraulic pump, and so are these. Here is the brain just below the bend joint equal to our diaphragm area. Stupid design. Here is the main battery and it extends down the tops of both legs. The mesh here at the lower chest area is for heat dispensation. Stupid design too.

Jon: That brain looks sort of familiar looking.

[The K's point over their shoulders toward the area completely dark.]

Jon: Oh no, they are based on our crystal tech.

The K's: Yes. Time to dismantle it. We noticed something in one of the recorded news films we watched. Jerri, that is your name right?

[The fork lift driver walks up closer.]

Jerri: Yes, it is.

The K's: Would you take this punch and go to the machine shop. You will find a lot of racks of treaded and untreaded rods on the left after the clothes racks. Please find us a rod that is the same thickness as the bottom of this broken punch. It cannot be any larger. Take someone else with you too. There are bolt cutters hanging on one or more of the racks. We need a piece at least 1 meter long. Thanks.

[Jerri grabs the punch. Grabs another lady and off they go.]

The K's: Stand back don't know if this piece will eject and which way, I don't see anything that looks like hinges. We are going to insert this Philips screw driver in this hole next to the lower knee cap.

[In unison from both sides they insert screw drivers and the calf pieces pops up and falls off to the floor on both sides of the table.]

The K's: That was not very exciting.

Jon: Good.

Melody: If these blow up, know I am not going to forgive you for killing us.

The K's: We like you Mini Misty; we think we will keep you around for laughs.

Melody: What do I do with this, grandpa?

[Jon takes the vial of Silver, unbuttons part of her top and slaps the end of the vial on her upper breast bone. Melody gets wobbly and Jon holds onto her shirt till Melody melts to the floor.]

Jon: Sweet dreams silver eyed pink something or other.

The K's: Wow she looks like a beet with a road map. We didn't pay much attention to her.

[The K's proceed to do the same in other joints and pop off more pieces. Jerri and the other lady

(Kerrie) return with 2 long thin rods. The K's take it and smile.]

The K's: We want you to be our helpers. Can you keep a secret? Because some of the things we might discuss if they get around could endanger all of us here and the Main Cave.

Jerri: We are sisters and yes we used to be in the army. We can keep secrets. Is Melody okay?

Jon: Yes, she is actually better than fine now, even if she looks like a beet with a blue green road map.

The K's: You are ingenious. This is stainless steel; you were never going to cut it with those bolt cutters at your strength levels. You used the laser band saw. Good job humans.

[The K's both hold onto the steel rod and push it into a hole under the arm pit. Nothing happens. They try again with a grunt and the AL comes apart in the middle section. The K's put on industrial rubber gloves and reach inside and pull out a long tubular section that has a wiring plug on it which they unlatch to finally get the brain out of the AI. They then hit the tube against the AI's chest plate and the cracks in the tube fracture the rest of the way and a 90% intact crystal is there. They take off the one end cap with the fiber optic cables attached. One of the K's hands it toward Jon and right as he holds out his hand to catch it. The K crumbles the crystal into his hand. It is like salt but a little more transparent.]

Jon: I sure didn't expect that!

The K's: Remember our reconstituted crystals?

Jon: Yes they were basically worthless and they were not good for human or Little Brother either. So we have flawed AI's? Now I know why they didn't blow this place to pieces while they had the chance. They need our crystals. We have millions of them and everyone probably knew that before the war.

The K's: No offensive, Jerri & Kerri, this is just a stupid AI soldier. The reconstituted crystal could not have enough brain power to wage the methodical war that has taken place. Would one of you check with those who brought these in. Did they take off the top of the stack first?

[Kerrie leaves. In about 2 minutes she returns and before she even gets to them.]

Kerrie: Yes, off the top and next to the doorways first.

The K's: Please instruct them to tag them the way they take them off with a permanent marker or something. We need one from the middle of the pile and one from the very bottom. Also the farthest away one. Just those 3 for now. Oh, if by chance there appears to be a different design as you go down through the pile, bring it. Be careful if you see or hear anything from inside of one of them, get back here, like right now! We don't want anyone dying out there.

Jon: I am proud of you K's, spoken like a true leader.

[The K's look at him with an intense frown, bottom lips sticking out then continue to cut out cables and hydraulic hoses. In the next 20 minutes they have this AI almost totally in parts except for the cracked seeping battery.]

K's: We are true leaders, we had 10,000 spiders to manage in just the Main Cave.

[The K's stick their tongues out at him.]

Jon: I figure you will test the battery closer, but how long can one of these stay charged?

The K's: In combat mode like we saw in the films, 36 hours tops on a sunny day. 24 hours on a cloudy day. I think I understand why they kept killing off the camera men in the films even before the soldiers. Here look at the underneath of the armor skin. See the webbing? The upper armor is covered with mini photo cells. Now I know why the lasers appeared to have no effect. They absorbed the short blasts. There is also some other compounds here designed to reflect off the lasers. We will need to test more later.

Jon: How can you be sure about the time without testing?

The K's: We designed these batteries. We used them in the Scooters, in case of reactor failure. Jerri and Kerrie would you please go and look around for a battery that you think looks like this one in the far end of the machine shop. Take a golf-cart, it is over a mile to the end and you will need the head lights. We will test the chemicals in the event they improved upon our design. Don't do any turns into other caves. At the very end is an exit back to behind the Kitchen Area close to the septic system. That is the easier way back here.

Jon: I see another one coming this way for you to dismantle. Hand me a pair of those rubber gloves, I am going to test a theory.

[One K hands him a pair and he rolls the table out of the way and proceeds to start digging and examining every part on the table and in the trash. In about 20 minutes, Jon goes up to the table where the K's have the other AI dismantled and throws down some pieces on the table.]

Jon: They are using our scrap pieces. The pump is the landing gear hydraulic, correct? The battery is for sure ours. See the overlapping Octopus and Spider symbols on those pieces?

The K's: Yes except there is a star over the top of the spider.

Jon: The star is hexagon. Crystal, Octopi and Spider, looks very Cave to me.

The K's: That is neat. We like it. I hope we get to meet who came up with it in this second life.

Jon: Anything new to report?

The K's: Yes, this one has only a partial reconstituted crystal, which still is just a low ranking soldier. Time to eat. I am guessing it will take them some time to get us a bottom piece of trash. We still don't see anything smart here. No supper genius stuff. Okay, time to feed face; coming?

Jon: Be grateful you didn't find anything that impressed you in our enemies.

I am sure, a couple cave dwellers want to talk to us.

[As they are walking back toward the lit part of the cave, the Nobodies land on Jon's and one of the K's shoulders.]

Me-Tis: You can sleep in your own bed tonight. The bedroom and Lounge area are new. We told Melody she has a place too in there. The bed is the 10x Super King as before.

Jon & The K's: Thanks.

[Location: Kitchen area.]

[The Nobodies disappear. Once close to the kitchen they see various pots of food cooked and setting out on hot plates with a sign help yourself kitchen is closed till we get a few hours of sleep. We are starting shifts soon. They grab some plates and sit down.]

[Stop the Steal.] [TOC](#)

Jon: How are they getting recharged if they blew up everything? Especially our 10,000 or so outside.

[The K's start to look up and around the ceiling and then stare at a certain area. Jon knows exactly what they are looking at and shakes his head.]

The K's: We are getting sick of thieves.

[All 3 get up and the K's lead. They go over to their golf-carts and open up a saddle bag and they pull out a grenade very much looks like a German designed one once they pull out the handle from the middle and twist the top. They put their thumb prints on the glass at the same time and the glass turns red. Then one of them hurls the grenade and hits the area of the ceiling they had been looking at a large box with conduits going into it. Instantly the box disappears some electrical sparks hit the

floor and a sound like something heavy hit the granite floor below where the electrical box was. Within seconds, the K's phones ring.]

The K's: How many missiles?

Ladies on the other end: 3 and they are stuck in the gravity well.

The K's: Thanks, in about 30 minutes, if nothing else comes our way like AI's, proceed and get us a bottom of the pile version AI.

[They hang up their phones and look back toward Jon. One K disarms a grenade and puts it back in the saddle bag.]

The K's: Did it get brighter in here and more lights turned on?

Jon: Yes, it sure looks that way. For sure you were right. So how much more are they stealing? The main fusion reactors are not on, I was in there earlier this week. But I didn't check the auxiliary ones figuring they have to be on.

The K's: The feed goes over the top of the main fusion reactors to the auxiliary buildings. We need some recon into the buildings and make sure we are not turning off freezers or something necessary.

Jon: How is the Spider Storage Complex fed?

The K's: Self contained. The diagnostic said it is still there and minus 20 degrees inside. So if that is correct and they didn't bomb it to pieces, thinking we were inside; we have years of food. When we get back in time remind us to put that in a cave somewhere.

[Stop the Steal #2.]

[Location: Narrow Cave, just off of the Entrance cave where all the Main Reactors are at.]

[The K's, Jon, Melody with Cindy, Kerrie & Jerri walk into the Narrow Cave.]

The K's: Time to turn off more of their electricity.

Jon: K's is the only connection out to the electrical grid the six posts next to the high wires for power leaving this place and going elsewhere.

K's: Yes, but you have to remember those lines will grow back they are organic. So you will have to cut them every couple of weeks.

Cindy: Show me which ones to cut, and I could take a laser welder out and be done with them. But what about the Bio-City?

K's: Bio-City is self contained. What happened to the old power plant?

Cindy: The old power plant is located in the Bio-City as a museum piece of history.

K's: Good, that is the only other feed out of here once we kill the main one in here.

Cindy, the AI's will go and keep going across the 4 lane to reconnect the power cables if anyone would like some AR Welder target practice? Once you think it is safe to spend some time there put on some welding goggles and cut the cables at the Invitation Center and then melt them to where they have to completely replace them. That will give us a very large target to shoot.

Jon: I am going to show you the image of what you need in a telepathic burst. Ready.

Cindy: Ready. Wow that is intense. I will get some others and be back in a few.

Melody: Does Bio-City feed the main lines?

The K's: We don't know. But if it does get a laser welder to Bio-City right before the sun comes up and kill those wires going to the high wires or substation. Don't cut, uh [pause], cut the high wires too. Both places. But there is a place where there is more hanging wire on springs to take care of expansion, cut there. We are guessing that kills most of Indiana if any of our power plants are still live. If only the Tables worked, we could shut them all down, oh well not right now.

Jon: What was the powder out of Melody's body?

K's: Strontium 90, and what was fallout that got embedded, now decayed. If we have a human we can't fix, we could try to put them through the reactors like we showed you 70 years ago or so. We are afraid the gravitons might rip tissue apart. I wonder how many humans Ester can clean out at a time. Strontium 90 in what would have been typical exposure is not that dangerous. But she had lots. So they must be eating it indirectly from the soil and water.

Jon: 1 or 2. When she is back to her nature self maybe 3 or 4. So not a great cure there for the masses but we can hook up 4 soon. We should pick the one most needed. I hate doing it that way but we do need the help.

[Trip to the Ether.]

Jon: Time to go to bed, and we need to get Melody too.

The K's: But we are not sleepy yet.

Jon: Who said we are going to sleep; the bed is fixed now.

The K's: Last one there is a rotten egg.

[They all run to the golf-carts and take off. As the K's are running through the Main Cave they grab Melody who just woke up and hold her down. Jon gets to the bedroom first.]

Jon: Ha, ha.

The K's: Doesn't count, we had to get a hitchhiker. Okay everyone in bed.

Melody: Excuse me! That is my grandfather remember?

The K's: This isn't sex. Anyway we all know what Mini Misty looks like without any clothes on. We even know about the secret birthmark.

Melody: What?

Jon: They programmed the secret questions and answers.

Melody: Cute.

[Everyone takes off their outer clothes and gets into bed.]

K's: Yes Mini Misty. Go watch the Octopi training film when we are done here. There is a video station under the right Water Tower.

Jon: No & Not where are you?

[Me-Tis & Mu-Tis come down and lay on the headboard with their heads next to Jon's head.]

Jon: Melody, I don't know if you will be able to join us or not since you are a transforming human. Actually you look like a beet with silver eyes with an imprinted road map. But if you can on this trip, the takeoff will make you feel very sick, but you will not throw up it is all in your head and not your stomach.

[They all appear together in a dark space, and then they feel like the floor is dropping down and the room is spinning. Then each one of them can see themselves in the bed but from an upward angle as they start flying through the Main Cave.]

Jon: Let's go outside. Melody you will need to tell me if I need to go left or right or whatever direction. I am planning to go through each one of the buildings outside and see what is inside them. Then we will be making a larger circle around the Main Cave but outside. Then I plan on taking us downward where the old missile silos are at to get a closer look at the AI's in action. Here we go. Well the building and add-on buildings where our electrical power goes into is very much nothing. The AI's stole your toys too.

K's looks like we can kill that circuit for sure.

The K's: We don't know what happened here since we have been dead but the building used to have close to a 1000 spiders and a lot more equipment.

Jon: Yes I remember is was about as active as the machine shop was. Even your lab had a lot of traffic. Checking on the Spider Storage Building, it appears to be completely intact. The Invitation Building is intact except for some windows busted. How is it feed?

K's: Stop. Go downward. See the cables?

Jon: Yes. Melody don't know if you are strong enough to do this yet. Concentrate on the cables and then take your hand like you are wrapping it around them and then make a fist.

Melody: That was amazing. I closed my eyes because of the sparks and then realized I can burn my virtual eyes. The AI's will go fix those soon, we need to get Cindy to melt them.

Jon: Now to the enemy, let's see what is in the semi trucks. Busted AI's, so we must be the rebuild center for this part of the country. Other semi, oh no, it is fill with nuclear fuel rods. They will make a Chernobyl, breeder or real electricity. This will keep them going for a long time. Next one, is crystal pieces and spare parts. Yes, this is the rebuild center for sure. Hold onto your stomach, Melody, we are going downward. What is that AI carrying in the box? Going through the box now. Looks like pieces. Let's go toward the cave off of the silos. Just as I expected the rebuild center. Let's go down to where the Cold War missiles were. Uranium fuel rods and more even more fuel rods. Those four are building a nuclear reactor. Once they get this all done. It will not matter about our electric power going to them. On to the next silo. Great! There are more fuel rods and now 3 more reactors getting built. Is that loud machinery?

The K's: It's some of our core drills.

Jon: They are trying to drill into the Main Cave. Idiots. They are going the wrong direction they will hit water, GOOD! If the brain connections are lost, bye bye.

Mu-Tis: We were not happy with the old cave dwellers but we would be even less with the new ones. We tampered with their instruments. We used to watch the spiders use those devices, so we stood in front of one and it saw us as the crystal mine. The AI's could not see us. We thought that was a good thing.

The K's: If they used infrared sight they might have seen you, but apparently they can't see Silver just like the Octopi can't see Black.

On a hot cloudy night, spiders would be able to walk right up to them and sledge hammer them to death. The spiders, if they were not sick, are probably equal strength to the AI. The AI's have no 'building abilities' or to 'think outside the box.' After about the 4th box we carried down the stairs from outside would be the last one, we would have chutes or conveyors. Everything AI shows a lack of major ingenuity.

Melody: I could take out those semi's with a few others.

Jon: Is there radar in their heads?

The K's: No. Decent distance communication. They have outer antennas down their backs good for about a mile. Radar is in the upper breast plate and not that great, more along the lines of motion-detection.

Jon: Let's continue on; this talking back and forth drains me. I think it has to do with the sickness of these humans. We have 3 or 4 more little outreaches of this cave.

The K's: There is a passage only spiders could get through that is from the Secondary cave to the silos.

Jon: Hold that thought. This cave is making solar cells, is that right K's?

The K's: Yes and they stole our rare earth jars. That was stupid to store all this stuff over here. We will fix that problem in the past when we figure out a way there.

Jon: Don't we wish we could. Or they were in the buildings topside. Final cave branch, missile

storage. Recharging bays and it looks like 3 thousand are recharging. Hold on we are leaving. [Long pause.] Is everyone awake. Melody you okay?

Melody: Horrible headache but fine otherwise. It's hard to see through the sparkles.

Jon: Melody get with the humans and do some drone shopping to see if we have 3 working ones. I want to kill some semi's. Are we ready for war ladies?

Everyone: Yes!

[**Stop the Steal - Failure.**] [TOC](#)

[The K's and Jon proceed into the main fusion reactor room. The K's climb up the wall and take off the bolts to an access door and the door drops to the floor. They then go into the wiring gallery and crawl about 200 feet to the disconnect switches.]

The K's: The shop building always looks so strange from this view. The disconnects are different. I guess new design. 1,2,3 pull.

[Explosion, electricity everywhere. The Nobodies feel the explosion and grab the K's and move them out of the electricity and down the cable gallery to lay them on the floor in front of Jon. Jon reaches in the K's front pouch pockets and pulls out syringes of Silver and injects into their chests. Melody and others get to them there.]

Jon: There are flat black 55 gallon barrels with a silver stripe on them. Get me some of them as soon as you can here and some tools to open them.

[Melody and Jon start CPR on the K's. Mu-Tis and Me-Tis lay their hands on the sides of the K's heads and disappear.]

Melody: I hate when they leave like that.

Jon: They are not gone; they are inside them.

[The K's wake up and one looking at Melody's face, with the look 'why are you kissing' me. The other looking at Jon's proceeds to kiss him. It startles Melody. Jon picks up his head.]

The K's: Ouch, we be hurting. We can't bend up.

Jon: You are like very well burnt toast. I am guessing most of your back muscles are gone. Lucky for you that your spinal bones are carbon fiber alloy. I don't know how much internal damage.

Ladies in the background: We have a barrel as you asked.

Jon: Put it right between them 4 feet away from their feet and remove the top lid. Don't get any of the contents on you. It seems to be dangerous to humans these days. Ready for a next dose K's?

[Jon pulls out 2 more syringes and hold them where they can see them.]

The K's: Yes.

[He shoots these syringes in their legs.]

Ladies: Lid is off. It is full of Black goo.

[Jon gets up and goes to the back of the barrel and pushes it over. The Black goo starts moving completely around all sides of the K's.]

Jon: The Black is not covering them like it should. We need sandbags to create a bath tub of Black around them.

Ladies: We know where there are some. We'll go get them.

More Ladies: We have 2 more black and silver barrels. How many more do you need?

Jon: Don't need to be in a hurry but 10 as you can get them here. We need sandbags, the previous group of ladies just left to go get some. We need to build a bath tub around the K's and submerge them in this black goo. Melody there is in the Medical labs, plasma looking bags with spider symbols

on them bring 4 and grab a few IV kits and racks. Also a surgical kit and look in the computer for where a Power Port kit is and bring 3 just in the event I need them. Oxygen masks and bottles also. Ask if by chance we have a real doctor among the humans, I really need a surgeon for the power ports. I can if I have to.

[The second set of ladies leave with Melody. Jon gets up and walks around to the back of the fusion reactors and grabs the First Aide Kit off the wall.]

Jon: I am going to attempt to cut off your jump suits. Do you think the Black is working?

The K's: We can't tell, we can't feel good or bad. But we are hungry; we think that is a good sign. You know that Me & Mu are very talkative little ladies; we would have never guessed that about them. They are just a chattering to each other. We can't really understand them. It's Sexpots' Ancient Egyptian Language.

Jon: I just figured out how to talk to Liza. As soon as we get you submerged, it is time to talk to the Spider Cave.

The K's: We have a worse problem. The AI's are still getting our electricity. We need you to tell Melody the following because we are going to go off for a while, not a comma, so don't worry. You will need to get into the cable gallery about 3 meters. Wrap the 6 cables with steel screen, stuff steel wool, even metal kitchen scrubbers inside between them if she can find it or even small wire mesh. Get one of the jet packs and one of the last black hole grenades. Grease herself all over with some of the lithium grease in the machine shop. So then hit the fly button on the jet, drop the grenade on the wiring and she can escape quickly. She is going to hit hard so might put bed...

[The K's are asleep.]

[Everyone comes back and some more women and start building the tub.]

Melody: We have a doctor as she points to the older man who is Cindy' father.

Jon: Jack of all trades huh?

Larry: I was a plastic surgeon. I starting because I wanted to help burn and accident victims but the Main Cave kind of put that part of my business to rest. So I called myself a vanity doctor, I did the movie stars, the hooker stars, and whoever else wanted to look good or younger.

Jon: We need a power port put in each one of them so they can get their dose of Spider Go-juice.

Doctor: I can do that, we will need some kind of temporary sterile environment.

The K's: We don't need, we are immune to human diseases. Yes, we are awake, but a no go to last long. Cindy would you set us up a little so we can see more than the ceiling.

Cindy: Okay. I have metal net I can put behind you so you will still be in the Black once Jon pours more in. By the way I cut the power cables outside, didn't even have to leave the cave. I shot through the Gravity Well and the ones going to the Invitation center are not covered in an area..

Jon: Stop!

Cindy: Why?

Jon: You are in the Black. Any reaction?

Cindy: It tingles. It kind of feels good. Anyway how else was I going to get leverage to lift them up.

Kerrie: Me too.

The K's: Sorry we are not thinking well but Jon you need to examine her after she sets us up and Kerrie. We are leaving soon again.

Doctor: As soon as you are ready, I am but I will need something to put my knees on. They don't serve me well in my old age.

[A couple women in the crowd takes off their blouses fold them for his knees.]

Jon: I can assist you from this side or I can get in between the K's whatever works best. You don't need that alcohol. Wait and I will smear some Black on the area. Ready when you are.

Doctor: I presume they are on lots of pain meds.

Jon: No, spiders don't have to feel pain if they don't want to. The K's would ask for mirrors under normal circumstance so they could watch.

[Doctor looks surprised but proceeds to install the Power Port in the first K. Then he goes and does the second one.]

[1 hour later.]

Doctor: That went extremely well. I will be in the kitchen, 22 on the phone. Cindy and Kerrie please keep an eye on them.

Jon: Time to hook them up. Cindy are you going to sit there in the Black because I am going to pour in another barrel. Being an Octopi that should not feel good at all. Doctor Larry, a question?

Larry [turning around]: Yes.

Jon: Was Cindy an implant?

Larry: Yes my wife was born without ovaries. Her female attributes are chemical and plastic. But she wanted to give birth so bad especially after both sisters had one. So your B's arranged it. So we have a Cindy and love her very much. I will be in the Kitchen.

Cindy: I love you too, Dad. Yes pour away, I am not wearing any pants to get up just yet; it just felt like I should sit here.

Jon: Here goes the next barrel. Melody, as soon as you are finished playing in the Black barrel, we need to blow those cables. That should actually burn you. Cindy, Kerrie and you should both be having a reaction. Everything is so messed up.

Cindy: Turn around so I can get out.

The K's: We wish we could laugh Mini Sherrie. Complete with Jon's mole or use to be.

Jon: Hold still Cindy. Okay K's, what should I do?

The K's: Poke her on the brightest pink area with a needle.

Jon: Ready, on 3, 2, 1.

Cindy: You poked before 1.

The K's: We can cure the spiders and humans.

Jon: Seriously? YES!

K's: Check out her out everywhere, take off the rest of your clothes. Check to make sure no black spots.

Jon: None.

[The K's smile ear to ear and purr. Me-Tis' & Mu-Tis' heads pop out of the K's and they look around to make sure no one else but the 6 of them are there. Melody jumps. Kerrie makes a hop 3 feet away out of the Black. Me-Tis & Mu-Tis come completely out and float away. The K's and Jon are laughing at Melody and Kerrie. Cindy just looks puzzled.]

Jon: So how is your self diag my little machines?

K's: We have 2 internal bleeds that are almost healed. We are only on one kidney and bladders that are full. One lung and one sort of one; both have water in them but not bad yet. Heart sack is injured and also has crap water and a little blood, not bad yet. We can't do solid food yet but we could eat Spider Tubes.

Jon, you will need to do the rest of hooking us up and probably should clean us out inside. Sorry; we are so lame right now. When you are ready, will you go to bed with us. PLEASE! Could you hit us with some Euphoria? We need new Spider Go-juice; the bags are almost empty.

Melody: I am on it. I can't believe you all laughed at us. It is not like heads pop out of bodies everyday. Have they been there the whole time? Also time to grease me. They have the ladder in place already. On second thought I am going to go up there now and spy it out. K's, how fast will you go through the Go-Juice.

Jon: You talk to fast. Yes they kept the K's alive till their bodies started regenerating. I am going to go get the Spider Tubes. Can you do TT's ice cream K's? Ladies glad you're back, please make sure the Ms. Pinky's here don't kill themselves. Kerrie hop up, I need to make sure you are okay too.

Kerrie: Uh.

The K's: Another mini Sherrie is bashful.

Jon: Let me tell you a secret that you know I can't know. You my sister Sherrie, Jerri and Cindy. You have an overgrown sized...

Kerrie: STOP! I am getting up. [Pause.] My knee doesn't hurt.

Jon: The Black in areas is stuck on, good sign. I am going to push the Black back into the tub. No black spots and you are blotches of pink already. When you look like Miss Beet, I will be very happy.

Cindy: I am hungry. I am going to eat.

Jon: Good sign also.

Kerrie: Me too. Why are you calling us mini Sherrie?

The K's: You 3 are Jon's kids from the sperm bank in the Spider Storage Building. Cindy and Kerrie stand facing each other. Tell us that you both don't have the same hips, breasts, and a mole on your butts on the exact same place. Maybe have the same hairlines and very similar shaped noses. Jon's nose before a epic wreck as a kid. Mini Misty over there is Jon's sperm too but followed more Misty's genes. Sherrie was Jon's almost perfect genetic twin sister. Jon do you feel her?

Jon: No K's, but I am not counting that out. This world is not our world. I had almost the same tie to Liza, Amy, and Jamie R.

Wait till I get back before you set the bomb. Kerrie get your sister and both of you go to the bathroom and empty what you can then sit inside that open barrel of Black. IF you know how to use scuba gear or breath through your mouths underwater, get some tubing and go completely under. We need to get a gigantic swimming pool and fill it with this Black goo for everyone in the Cave to soak.

Jerri: The Black is crawling up my arm.

[Jon walks over and puts his hands on her arm and then moves it back into tub.]

Jerri: Lose the clothes and stick in both arms. This is a great sign. Kerrie you too.

K's: Information for you to spread around to all the females. Jon did a lot of the Gynecological examines for decades in the Main Cave. Some of the Medical Octopi did most of the rest of them and a few humans had there own Gynecologists. The testing equipment for the pap smear is in the Ballroom.

Are we all covered now in Black but our heads?

{Jon telepathically to the K's: Submerge, you are 95% covered. You sort of lied. 15 people a year doesn't count much toward their thinking of thousands.}

The K's: Goodnight again all.

Kerrie: Yes, even most of your face and hair is really ragged and some is crispy.

K's: Can you cut off the crispy?

Kerrie: Sure. This Black is so weird.

Jon: I am going after all the supplies now. I will be back. Where were you Jerri & Kerrie during the bombings?

Jerri: Both of us was in a Stealth Aircraft. The electronics were shielded from cosmic rays but not that great from warheads going off under us. We crash landed in the truck parking lot which was almost empty that morning and we went to Bio-City. Another thing odd almost every woman here was in an invitation at one time and most of the men were or are their husbands or lovers. There are only about 5 men not from Virginia City or New Smythville.

K's: Bring us back a missile, we want to take it apart. And our laptops!

Jon: When you can eat a T-bone on your own... maybe.

[20 minutes later.]

[Jon returns with a golf cart full of stuff.]

Melody: I am about to proceed. I waited on you to show back up.

Jon: I will walk over there. Wait.

[Jon pulls Kerrie & Jerri up out of the Black. Turns them till they are looking at each other and touches their forehead together then lets them stand straight.]

Jon: Can you talk to each other but don't move your mouths?

[Kerrie & Jerri shake heads yes. Jon pushes on their heads and they get the idea to submerge again.]

[Stop the Steal #3.] [TOC](#)

Jon: Go for it Melody.

[Pop and a strange sound. Then Melody flies out and the jet pack falls off and she hits against the reactor that is covered in foam bedding and air mattresses. Melody falls down and Jon catches her in his arms.]

Jon: You okay?

Melody: Yes. I think and here have some grease.

[Jon drops her and she lands on her feet. Jon takes off running and she slips and slides and ends up on the floor.]

Jon: Are you okay now?

Melody: How are we going to get this off of me? I really hope I don't stink like this grease for the next few days.

[The K's and the other ladies who just walked in are laughing.]

Jon: Wipe off what you can. Go to the kitchen and sit in one of the dishwashers; just make sure you turn down the temperature to as low as it will go or you will be cooked vs. pink when you get out.

K's could we have a Black Octopi?

Little Brother: The AI's are moving a tank toward the Main Entrance Cave.

Jon: Turn the screens up to full.

Broadcast: If anyone is in the Entrance Cave evacuate immediately; end.

The whole area is brighter in here and lit to the Genetics Lab.

K's: Yes we are on full nighttime power and we hear the ventilators finally. We are close or at full functioning internal power. The ventilators are cut first thing to save power.

Little Brother, do we have full laser capability? Not quick short blasts but full sustained beams. If so, melt the tank and any AI you can target.

[Talk to the Spider Cave.]

Jon: Open up communication to the Spider Cave, try office first and then Liza's bedroom.

Little Brother: Tanks exploded when they got hot; 4 total, 3 discovered at edge of forest. Multiple

AI's on ground, unknown status, some brown grass burning. Small forest fire, which should burn out in a few hours or less. I will continue to monitor for AI targets. Opening old gate, there is a car with humans, bad timing.

Jon: Use one of the lasers on very low power to direct the car into the old shop building.

Jon [Ancient Egyptian language]: Oh hi daughter. Sorry but I am pissing off the swatters on my property; uh sorry, your property. I can see from the look on your face you don't believe me. Wait a second.

[Jon goes over to where the K's are in the tub. Phone rings.]

Jon: Yes Melody I am talking with your great aunt. That sounds so weird. Get here when you can.

[Jon speaking in a foreign language again: I sure hope you remember Metlakitla Ta Tooo's native language. The AI's are stealing everyone's electricity to recharge themselves when the sun is not out. We just turned it off here. Don't worry we are fully secure. Secondly you need to change all the laser weapons to do a continued blast on the AI's and one 50 cal for good measure.

Liza: Okay. We didn't know that.

Jon: Daughter, how are you all doing there?

Misty: We are good. How are you all standing up?

Melody: Hi grandma.

Jon: Are you a monster?

Misty: Well, I am to the machines. Does that count?

Jon: I can accept that.

Misty: It is great to see you again, dad. Oh and by the way this line is perfectly secure. I have put multiple things in place that will alarm us if it doesn't stay that way. I somehow knew you were back.

Jon: Well, you always were good with a computer.

Misty: I have someone who wants to talk to you.

Janella: Hi Jon.

Jon: Okay, let me see the eyes.

[Janella closes her eyes, and when she reopens them, they have silver instead of white around the pupils.]

Jon: It's nice to see the two of you and how soon can you get here?

Misty and Janella: Yes it is and Bye.

[House Cleaning - Silo.]

Jon: By the way I am giving them a much better target than you. Little Brother detonate nuclear warhead 23, no count down and no warning. [English.] Go says the big dog.

[It sounds like thunder goes off in the background.]

Jon: Little Brother who just arrived?

Little Brother: It is your daughter, Liza.

Jon: Please tell her where I'm at.

{Liza telepathically to Jon: Wow that worked. I am coming your way shortly. Is that missile where I think it is?

Jon to Liza: Yes.}

Liza: Little Brother, Go says the big dog.

Little Brother: Done.

[Jon counts down on his fingers 10 seconds. Very small vibration from the floor.]

Jon: That wasn't as bad as I expected. Me-Tis & Mu-Tis did well. Sneaky One, I don't know how long this conversation will last get the spiders and the humans in tubs of Black. I hope the lakes are still downstairs. I love you all, talking again soon. Bye.

[Stop the Steal #4.]

[Jon turns.]

Jon: Big Brother full override of Little Brother.

Big Brother: Who are you?

Jon: I am Jonathan Harrison Symth [German pronunciation]. Grandson of Harrison Symth, who was sneaked out by Eienstein during the Hitler days, given American status at age 13.

Big Brother: Hello Jon. Full power with all internal power reactors. Activate War Room. Other requests?

K's: Blow the power disconnects on Substation 0-5. Tie them into the internal Cave Power Grid for additional power to offenses and defenses. That should stop most of western Ohio from invading us. If you have control over any in Illinois, kill them also.

Big Brother: Only the ones on I-70 and most on I-74. So you have limited the east side and almost all from lower Illinois from attacking you.

Jon: Big Brother please route whatever you can into here for War Room abilities for the K's to see on the monitors.

[Jon runs out to the Main Cave.]

[Pause.]

K's: Cut down the trees to the old Silo's and melt every around them. Watch out for new AI missiles coming our way. Contact the Bio-City and tell everyone to get to cover; inside corners of the rooms and buildings are the strongest.

[Location: Main Cave, War Room.]

[Jon once inside the Main Cave, War Room, full daylight, monitors are now on and in a 360 degree pattern. A island with computer keyboards and microphones are now inside the 360. The humans are standing, looking around and in a complete daze.]

Jon: Hey everybody sorry to inform you but I just declared war on the AI's and 10,000 should be dead now.

[Clapping, screaming, laughing, jumping up and down.]

Everyone: Hallelujah!

Jon: QUITE PLEASE! [Pause.] Hi daughter. Little Brother can you see movement anywhere outside?

Little Brother: A semi truck escaped. Hard to see if anything else because of the trees which the K's ordered cut down.

Jon: Broadcast to Melody: Where are you at?

Melody: I am with the K's and they are screaming at me to bring them one of the missiles!

Jon: K's are you being bad little children?

K's: We need to figure out if we can send their missiles back at them.

Jon: Are you miraculously healed?

K's: No but we can teach the humans how to take them apart. The M... uh... Monkeys are helping

us use our arms. On side note, we need 5 humans in here with rubber gloves and aprons to scrap off the gray and white goo. Tons of it is coming to the surface now. We are cleaning up around the silos.

Jon: Get them a missile. We need to destroy that truck.

[Cindy walks up behind Jon.]

Jon: Hi Cindy. I have a job for you to do. How fast can that jalopy of yours go?

Cindy: Not very fast. There is a dirt bike in the building that you shipped us to, I can use it. Do I know you.

Liza: Don't remember you but with the war who knows.

Jon: You're very resourceful. Grab the very last two Black Hole grenades, take them with you, see if you can catch the truck. Stay as close as you can to some kind of cover if there is any at all out there.

Cindy: Yes, I will. Are you really my Dad?

Jon: Larry is your dad, not me; I was a tadpole donation.

[Looking right at Liza.]

Liza: Little Brother. Please arm the lasers at the auxiliary buildings and see if any can make a mess ahead of the Semi or hit it.

Little Brother: Working on it. Sorry, not possible.

Cindy: Bye.

[Missile Guts.] [TOC](#)

[Location: Narrow Cave, where K's are located.]

[The women bring the K's, a new missile, and the K's start instructing them on how to take it apart.]

K's: Broadcast: Jon Private message.

[Jon puts on a set of headphones.]

K's: There is a brain inside of these and some blue diamonds. It is a part of a Spider's brain. Please come here and bring Liza.

[Location: Narrow Cave.]

[Jon leaves the Main Cave proceeds back to where the fusion reactors are. Once there, he approaches the K's and sees small tears in their eyes.]

K's: Clear the room! Except you Melody.

[Everyone leaves the room except the Jon, Liza, Melody and the K's.]

K's: Will you inject us with a new vial of silver?

Jon: Are you really ready for that?

K's: We need to talk to the brain.

[Jon looks very disgusted, but injects both of them with a vial of Silver.]

K's: You will need to drain the Black out of here. We need our hands.

[Melody, Liza, and Jon proceed to start taking down a few of the sandbags that are together and the black, gray and white starts pouring out on the floor. The K's wave over Melody. Jon and Melody pick out the Center container, which has the brain in it and hand it to them. One of the K's reaches out her finger and touches the brain.]

K's: Her name is Cynthia. I can see how her and her twin died in a scooter, when they crashed into the edge of a mountain trying to avoid lots of missiles after them. She has been cloned over and over and over. There is lots of deformities in this brain. I am going to tell her to hibernate now.

[Long pause; then the red light goes off, that is right next to the brain. The K's, start crying.]

K's: She's dead. She should have some rest. We are going to kill every last one of these metal monsters! The Communist Chinese and Muslims in 2020 were the only humans this inhumane.

[Jon and Melody hug the K's.]

[Liza walks up to Jon and they hug for a long time.]

Liza: K's, I would hug you, but that stuff just doesn't sit well with me anymore. Come on, give your grandaunt a hug.

[Long pause.]

Liza: I probably should tell you this, because the ranks can't hold things against me. I killed my mother, and auntie. I sent them into a battle that I knew they would not be able to leave alive. The battle allowed all of us to get to the Spider Cave.

Jon: You didn't kill them.

Liza: How do you figure?

Jon: There is no way to win a Kobayashi Maru.

[Liza starts crying and hugs onto her father Jon.]

Little Brother: Cindy has successfully left the building complex. Incoming missiles 15 minutes out.

Jon: Broadcast: every one out of the Hydroponics Bay get to the Main Cave; end.

Little Brother once all the humans are accounted for in the Main Cave fully arm all internal defenses in the Entrance Cave and Hydroponics Bay. If it is metal, and it moves, kill it. Don't shoot Ester.

K's: Little Brother please establish connection to the Spider Cave.

[Jon looks down at the helmet, which has the shoulder parts attached to it, which Melody wore inside of the conduit. He gets a smirk little smile on his face and starts laughing.]

Jon: Janella, I need you to do me a favor. I would like to have a CAT scan of that pretty little head of yours. Do you still have a Spider brain inside there. Send it here to the K's when you have it.

Janella: Yes, I still have a Spider brain. I still like sleeping upside down, from time to time.

Jon: Hey bubble butt. I have a job for you, I will discuss it later.

K's: Did you get the previous instruction for the humans and the spiders?

Misty: We are working on it as we speak.

Jon: Misty and Janella I need to cut this short. I will see you soon. Here talk to the K's. They got injured when we tried to cut the power to the silos.

Jon: Did anything happen on your end, when we nuked them?

Misty: The best that we can tell, they stopped the advance. I am guessing they are trying to regroup or re-purpose.

Jon: Good, I was afraid I might make trouble for you all.

Misty: As of yet, everything is fine. Speaking in auntie's language was a good idea.

The K's: We are going to help you kill every last one of those metal monsters.

Jon: Bye see you soon. Liza anyway you could close some of the Blast Doors? I would like to have a women's only area and teach Melody how.

Jerrie: Jon, we are welders too and a couple other women. We could make a large swimming pool of Black. There is all kinds of plate steel alloy around here.

Liza: I will help them get started and teach her how to breathe in the Black, so they can teach others. I am sure I can come up with a plan. I will have to leave after that when things are quite here. Bye Dad.

[30 Minutes later.]

{Jon telepathically to Liza: Why haven't Misty and Bubble Butt got here yet?

Liza to Jon: I am the only one who can amp up to use the Table and teleport. Most all Tables don't work, guessing too much trash in the atmosphere, just like telepathy is very limited.

The K's to Liza: We will figure out a way to fix you like we're going to fix the spiders and humans. Just give us time.}

[Time Ghost.]

Jon: I presume Sherrie is dead.

Liza: Sherrie faded away right after you died. Genny, Amanda, Amy and Jamie R died naturally. B's and C's could never explain it; they thought Sherrie might be a Time Ghost, planted from a different time line somehow. Jamie died of old age finally or that is what mom and Sexpot perceived. That is when Misty and Janella became Octopi. All this happened right before World War 3.

Jon: Thanks. Speaking of which, broadcast: we need all the humans to locate the barrels of Black, sandbags, empty barrels, whatever you can find to create either a swimming pool or some kind of large tub. Jerri and Kerrie are working on a large one, help if you can. There are barrels that are pale flat black in color, with a silver stripe around them. You will need to find them and fill up these swimming pools or bathtubs or whenever you can find with what is inside those barrels. Then each one of you will need to start soaking in those tubs. When you get out of the tub, clap your hands together and immediately put them in the Black. The Black which might be sticking to you will go back in the tub. You will have to inspect each other and make sure that no black spots show up once you have removed the Black goo. If a spot shows up, you will have to take a break from the baths, if it grows, see me. Otherwise, everyone continue on, and your skin will turn very pink. You will also find that your calluses will leave you, and that your skin may be easily hurt.

Larry and Kelly, you 2 for sure go first. Larry, we might need your expertise again. Everyone, you are actually going to grow new skin that's why it looks so pink. And while this is happening, you will be regenerating back into normal human beings who have not been through a nuclear war. Start arranging the shifts in the tubs amongst yourselves. Whenever the Black turns gray, or a milky color on top, scrape it off. Put this grayish goo in buckets, and off to the side and continue to keep the tubs full with new Black goo as you need to.

You can breathe under the Black, but the first time is scary. There are ventilator pumps with about 4 inch clear looking plastic plumbing on one end. Try to put the tubing in the tubs and drums of Black. Rotate every 2 hours if you don't have enough. This will put more air in the Black for you to absorb when submerged.

K's: Liza, the super fast missiles are based off of our technology and they are powered by a partial spider brain and cobalt diamonds. If anyone can rip open one of these missiles then place their hand on the brain. Tell the brain to hibernate, so Cynthia can rest in peace.

Little Brother: The missiles are coming in, they are not the super fast variety.

[Everyone is silent.]

[Time: 15 minutes later.]

Little Brother: Somewhere along the cruise variety, minimum nuclear warheads designed to kill not do major damage, no damage. Some are standard explosive, no damage. The turrets took out every single missile, approximately .5 to 1 mile before it struck on the Hydroponic side of the Main Cave.

The turrets on the Main Cave front entrance only had about a 50% success rate. These turrets need some serious maintenance work.

The K's: Sorry people we need more Black.

[Melody and Jon start putting back together the make shift tub. Jon pours 2 more barrels into the tub and has the K's completely submerged again.]

Liza: You know I need to get back.

Jon: Remember the trips we used to make in the Ether?

Liza: Yes, Genny loved them and Sexpot and my mom for multiple other reasons.

Jon: I don't know if the three of us have the power to do it. But I need to know if we really truly destroyed all the AI's that were in the silos and around here.

Liza: Let's find out. By the way, I had some spiders start cutting the high power lines at substations. The rubble is so bad close to us that the AI's didn't even fire missiles.

We found the AR Laser Welders are good at killing the missiles and they didn't realize why. So many mistakes have been made.

[Jon, Melody & Liza wave to the K's then proceed to go to the Bedroom.]

{Cindy telepathically to Jon: I got the Semi. It only had regular tires on it so they had to go pretty slow to plow their way on the main road. We have a really nice path now. There was so much trash flying around they did not notice me landing in the trailer. I put a grenade in the cab, and flew out the back. When it all came to a stop I put the other grenade in the trailer; it was full of crystals. I am heading back now. They didn't bomb the Bio-City best I could tell. I need to talk about a lot of things.}

[Day 4 Location: Bedroom. Midnight.]

[The Ether #2.] [TOC](#)

Jon: Let's see if this is going to work or not, hold on.

[They get a little dizzy, and then they actually start spinning in their minds.]

Jon: I am going straight to the silos. Is that you Me and Mu? .

The Nobodies: Yes. We are only helping you, not her.

Jon: Liza you owe these two an apology written in blood. We will discuss it when we are done and before you leave. Now let's continue on ladies. Oh this is gorgeous. I see a lot of little tiny black marbles, and lots of scrap pieces everywhere. Now we need to go a lot deeper, check out each one of the individuals offshoots of this cave. Machine shops gone, nuclear fuel rods, apparently are melted. The storage areas are trashed. So all we need to do is get the nuclear rods out of here, later. I wish we had some active Gravity Pounders to just dig a hole here.

K's: Little Brother. When Jon and them are back awake. Please relay this message to Liza, 'Will you stop by here one last time before you leave?'

[A few minutes later, Liza walks up to the K's.]

Liza: What do you need?

The K's: We need a dose of Silver, each. I doubt that Jon will give it to us because he is afraid that we might be getting high. It really is for medicinal purposes, even if it will get us a little high.

Liza: Here you go, ladies. You knew I would break the rules.

K's: Yes, you were one rebellious teenager till you found out Jon was your father. We need you here in 2 days, we should be somewhat mobile. We have weapon redesigns for the spiders, take one of the organic thumb drives out of our laptops with you.

[Flashback.]

[Location: Main Cave, The Bedroom. Time: 75 years ago.]

[Jon is in bed and wakes up from a deep sleep. [Pause.] His phone rings. It's the K's.]

Jon: Did you just have a nightmare of World War III?

K's: Yes.

Jon: I will meet you in the Lounge.

[Location: The Lounge. Time: 10 minutes later.]

Jon: I want you to find me Clara.

[Jon lays his .357 Magnum on the table.]

Jon: I am going to put her out of our misery once and for all.

Broadcast: Clara please report to the Lounge area so we don't have to hunt you down; end.

[Jon cracks his neck.]

The K's: You know there are 5,000 zombies in here and most of them are deformed or otherwise handicapped. That is what this entire Invitation was all about and they may go the full 40 days.

Jon: I know she will blend in really well, but we will find her. Or she will come here to gloat sooner or later.

The Other K's: We will start on the videos at day 1-2. K's start at day 3-4. We will get the XD's on day 5-6. Jon can you do day 7?

Jon: Done. Little Brother please broadcast day 7 of the Invitation, starting now and then go back to midnight in 4x speed of zombie movements in whatever sized chunks you think is best.

Janella: Can I kill her this time?

Jon: Bubble Butt you are waiting a long line. Come on over here with those 4 eyes of yours and help.

[Liza, Lesa, and Sexpot arrive at the Lounge]

Sexpot: Where do we start?

Jon: Mingle around maybe you can spot her. She probably has her whole crew here. If we find one, we might make her fork over Clara. See if you can find Jordan and Master Ami. They will love seeing their ending. Who knows, they might make them very uncomfortable and they blow their cover.

Sexpot: She might be here to grant one of her godly wishes to some of her disciples.

Jon: Then she would not have been in my head and the K's heads last night.

[Make 'em Blind.]

[Location Main Cave. Time: Still Day 4, just after Midnight.]

K's: Little Brother. Please shoot down or melt every single satellite you can hit that is not controlled by the Main Cave or Spider Cave, space junk too, just to make sure it is not a satellite. Start at the Death Star and go outward from there. Then, please connect us to the Spider Cave.

Joni: Hi K's. We are Joni. What can we do for you? By the way thanks for the tip on the Black. Some of us can wear it mostly and others have to submerge.

K's: Would you get us the C's?

Joni: We will be back in a couple of minutes.

[Long pause.]

C's: Hi K's.

K's: [Growl.] [Sternly.] Stand up, revolve around, we want to see you. If there is anyone in the room, would you ask them to leave now?

C's: They are leaving.

K's: The two of you are despicable. You are a shame to all of us spiders. The two of you are going to be here immediately. We are ashamed that you picked up human emotions and made all spiders look bad.

[The C's look like they lost their best friend, and they can barely look at the screen as they are talking.]

C's: We will leave with Misty and Janella; it is about 30 hours to get there.

K's: If you want to be human so bad when you get here. Maybe we can figure out a way to make you that way. I'm sure some of Sexpot's medicine for sick spiders is in the Ballroom still.

C's: Please don't do that; we will change; we promise.

K's: Stay safe, bye. Little Brother close conversation.

[Pause.]

K's: Little Brother, clean out as much of the skies between here and Texas as you can and around the Spider Cave, then continue as before. Make the AI's as blind as we can. If they have to become spaghetti to keep up communications that's great. One on one combat we can win, groups probably not.

Little Brother: Will do.

Jon: Are we being a little rough? There is a nuclear war going on you know, and we're not winning.

K's: We meant every word of it. If they are going to wallow in human emotion, they need to hit bottom to where up is the only option, then maybe they can come back up out of it.

Jon: I hope they are not suicidal.

K's: We are probably going to replace them anyway.

Jon: Are you so sure you have a replacement for them?

K's: Hope so, we hope they will fix themselves. Are you sleepy, we are?

Jon: Yes that's why I'm here. Cindy is going to join us in the Black. We may have to remodel your tub a little.

K's: We don't care if you get really close to us.

Jon: I'm glad you are feeling better and are joking around.

K's: We really aren't, but we are healing. Look we can even get our hands out of the black. But don't ask us to get our toes out; the legs just don't seem to work very well yet. Thankful we still have them. Remind us when we go back in time to make sure our extra spinal column is encased.

Jon: Sure when you get the Time Machine to work. In your sleep, did you figure out a way to go past 7 days?

Little Brother is anything more coming our way?

Little Brother: As of yet, not on the radar. But we only have a range of about 20 miles, and we have a couple of voids in that map.

K's: Please ask Liza if she can transport some spiders here. We're going to sleep now.

Goodnight.

Melody: Okay, I'm here, will I wake you all if I go hit the dishwasher again. And then come back?
Cindy, strip and get in the tub.

Jon: Unless Little Brother wakes us up. I'm thinking we are going to be real close to dead. Sorry I should've say something like that, even joking.

Melody: Grandpa, it takes time to get used to being in a war. I will be back in a few.

Jon: I will be asleep by then.

[Melody leaves. Jon gets in the tub with the K's and falls asleep almost immediately. Cindy crawls in. Melody comes in later and crawls in the tub right at the edge and views that Cindy is already multi-colors of pink and tan skin as she turns over. Melody slowly submerges Cindy. Cindy doesn't wake up.]

[Early morning. Jon wakes up first and finds the K's have actually entwined themselves around him and he smiles. He looks over at Melody. She is snoring. Cindy is completely submerged and is breathing just fine. The K's wake up and smile at him.]

Jon: Good morning ladies. I need to go see Ester.

The K's: Good morning Jon.

Jon: How are the legs?

K's: I doubt we could walk with them. We could probably wheelchair or golf-cart though.

Jon: Go back to sleep. Then in a couple hours when everyone is awake, I'm going to drain the black, which actually is pretty dirty white and gray right now. I'm going to get out and start taking down the sandbags to let the trash off.

[Cindy wakes up and instinctively hangs her head over the sandbags and yellowish gray goo comes out her nose and mouth and then she start breathing normally again. Cindy stands up out of the black and looks at herself, she is solid pink all over.]

Cindy: I heard all of that and I will do this. Then go back to sleep. Go see Ester. I will get some help. The women are doing a midnight shift too, since that is the best time to travel back and forth to the Bio-City. How did I know I could submerge?

Jon: Later we can talk. We have to get you back under the Black. Then you are going to look like a bright colored rose with a blue green roadmap.

The K's: He is telling the truth even if you don't believe him yet. I wish we had some mirrors. We would like to see what we look like.

[Jon, laughing.]

Jon: Geniuses, you know, we have video cameras everywhere, even here.

The K's: Little Brother, would you show us the side views and the back view of each one of us on the monitor in front of us. Thank you.

Little Brother: Would you like a top view also?

The K's: Yes please.

[They help the K's up. Jon and Melody looked over their skin, places where they were crispy are returning to normal. They check out the scars and there's no open sores or wounds. The muscles are growing back. The shapes of their backs are still not normal looking.]

The K's: We are looking pretty good. Now we can get a little bit of work done.

Jon: If you appear to be overworking, I will throw you back in this tub and put one of these sandbags on you.

The K's: We probably are going to have to sleep here anyway. But yes, boss. Our insides are just not up to par yet, besides our legs. Can you help us to get onto one of the twin golf-carts we made when you are back?

Jon: Sure.

[Jon Building up His Silver.] [TOC](#)

The K's: Type 2345 on the Hydroponics Terminal and that will run any humans out and keep them out.

[Location: Hydroponics Bay. Time 4:50 AM.]

[Lighting is on bright and Jon and Ester are alone.]

[K's Movable.]

[Location: Narrow Cave, close to Main Reactors. Time: 7:25 AM.]

Melody: I never slept so well.

Cindy: Would you check me out for black spots?

[Jon reaches in the Black and pulls up the K's.]

Jon: Ready to move around?

K's: Love it. Is Ester happy?

Jon: You are just typical women after all and like gossip.

K's: Those are fighting words.

Jon: Yes she is very happy and her plants are humming away. She will be mobile soon.

[A couple hours later, in the kitchen Jon is with the K's and they are eating baby food, Spider tubes, all with TT ice cream, and a couple of the flake Bio-Vitamin.]

Jon: Little Brother, where is Cindy?

Little Brother: She just came back from Bio-City. Only men are left there now.

Jon: K's, how can we tell when the humans are really fixed?

K's: We really need Sexpot or Lesa. It is sad they are not here. We never would have expected that. Do we have any Medical Octopi left in the Spider Cave?

Jon: I wonder if Liza has any of those abilities.

Little Brother: Liza has just arrived and I informed her of your location.

[Pause.]

Liza: Hi dad. I am glad to see the K's are mobile.

Jon: Can you look at the health of a person like your mother used to be able to?

Liza: It won't be very accurate. I am nowhere near as strong as I used to be but I have no problems trying.

Jon: Little Brother, would you ask Melody and Cindy to come to the kitchen?

Little Brother: Melody is on her way now. Now Cindy.

Jon: Let's see what they look like. Ester cleaned Melody out and Cindy has been in the Black off and on for a while.

Liza: Melody I am going to touch your chest, right up above your breast and see if I can read what's inside. Okay?

Melody: Sure not a problem, aunt Liza.

[Liza puts her hand on the top of Melody's chest and closes her eyes when she opens them back up they are silver. She has a blank stare for about a minute.]

Liza: For a person who had a 50-year-old body a month ago, you appear to be perfectly healthy and doing very well. The spiders have also been doing extremely well and the very few humans that we

do have in the Spider Cave.

[Long Pause.]

Liza: Same for you Cindy. [2 minutes later.] You are my full blooded sister and in great health other than you look like a half ripe tomato.

Jon: Catch.

Liza: Ready to be an Octopi?

Cindy: Yes, now I know why you kept blowing off my questions, dad.

Jon: Biological. Larry & Kelly are your parents and always will be. I will be dead in a year.

K's: Guess, who's turn it is now? Hop on...to the Main Cave up against the apartment side.

[In the Main Cave close to the wall next to the disintegration screen and stairs.]

K's: Climb in that barrel of Silver.

Liza: Don't you think I have tried that after the two of you told us about the Black.

K's: Bummer, but we want your legs to be covered in Silver for the next experiment. Set on the table stick your legs out and would somebody roll, her feet through the disintegration screen. Then roll her back this way.

[Her feet are bloody, and the Silver is inches away from where the blood is, where before she was originally covered from waist to toe with Silver.]

K's: That is very disturbing, and nothing of what we expected. How long before you regenerate back to normal?

Liza: About a day.

K's: Your mother could grow back her little finger joint in an hour. This is not at all good. Jon can you come with us, we think we've had enough for this day, already. We are tired, and maybe we can think about what's happening while soaking. We forgot would you get us one of the mechanical syringes. Do we have any placebos? We need them in the syringe for when the C's arrive. Thank you.

Liza: Hi Bam Bam. You are so very pinkish green. You look like an intestine, same color, all lumping too.

Ester: Are there any men in here? But I feel great and will return to pure human looking before tonight. May I sleep with you Jon tonight, my plants don't need me right now they are perfectly healthy. K's, how do I get more Bio-vitamin?

Jon: 1, an older man in the Kitchen, like me, so you will have to cover up when you turn out of being a pumpkin phase.

Ester: You two are so sweet. I need anything that is not fruit to eat. Even though you insulted me, here have some of my fruit.

Liza: Oh, thank you. I take it all back.

K's: We got a group of men from the Bio-City to help fix the turrets and hang our new laser cannon.

Melody: I can move the K's into the tub mentally now. So Grandpa you can stay here. Come on Cindy time to start learning your new life or what I can teach you of it.

Liza: Cindy would you like to have a sister?

Cindy: Yes. I would.

Liza: Let me see if I can fix my face. UUUh.

Cindy: We are twins, when I had some meat on my bones I looked exactly like you.

Liza: That is what I looked like at about 19. Octopi age till about 25-30 and never age again. So you know what you will look like soon.

Cindy: I have a aunt?

Liza: Yes, you have family. Meet your 2nd cousin Melody. If I got that right. I am blood daughter and Misty was the first adopted daughter many years before me. Mia and Katie died. Krystal is in a large Crystal. I didn't know how to fix her.

Jon: Is Krystal here or Spider Cave?

Liza: Here, your old Black Cave Office.

[Liza stands up, looks directly at the Main Table Area and turns ghostly then gone.]

Melody: Wow.

Cindy: Why do I know exactly how she did that?

Jon: All Octopi share information. All Spiders do, but much better at it.

The K's: We are the BORG, we will assimilate everything, except the AI. They will be returning to the dirt.

Cindy: You're weird.

[The K's put their heads together and purr then drive back with Melody hoping on the back of the golf-cart.]

[Dinning Area. Time: Noon.]

Little Brother: Liza is back.

Jon: Liza you need to train the only full strength Octopi we have.

Liza: Good idea.

Cindy: Bad news, the AI's seem to be coming from all areas this way according to the HAM radio reports. So far they are not on a killing spree. But they are bringing military weapons and vehicles. Everyone is staying very clear of them and maybe that is why none of them have died yet.

Jon: Little Brother, how many satellites have you shot down from here?

Little Brother: With the 2nd canon now, and the extra power plant, a very large circle around us and a fairly clean pathway to Texas. A rough estimation would be all satellites over the North American continent and possibly some out into the Pacific and Atlantic oceans in high orbit can be done. The ones that are not geosynchronous can be shot down as they spin toward us within the next 8-20 hours.

Jon: If we can't see what's going on in the world. I think the AI's need to be just as blind. Liza, could you make the K's a new tub as practice for the newbies maybe where the water towers are.

{Jon telepathically to the K's: How good are the Gravity Wells around the Bio-City in case the AI's and their military weapons use it for target practice.

The K's to Jon: Not great at the present time. The Bio-Cities were made to be nuke proof not bomb proof other than the roofs. We really were thinking more like accidental plane mishap or major tornados dropping cars. If they put multiple shots into the same area eventually the shells would hit the ground inside and could destroy enough to make a hole in the Gravity Well. The C's came up the bounce effect Gravity Wells that would have been so much better. Note to selves, when we go back in time, do that.}

Cindy: Can we get some of the Black out to men in the Bio-City?

Amy & Ann: We will have you a few barrels ready to transport. We fixed one of the semi trucks outside; it's only a half bed. But that should be plenty for a good first dose. We will pack some 'cooked' food too for them. The kitchen has been making and packaging what can be put in a microwave or put in a skillet. We are shipping some frozen too.

Jon: Are you listening Liza?

Liza: Yes. I think we should clear us a good road to the Bio-City, now that the silos are empty.

Jon: Would you check on the Earthen Globe Loaders out of a better name? We could make rifle ammo here. 17 mm can get through the webbing and kill AI's. Any idea how many AR rifles are here that could shoot new 17 mm ammo with a new barrel.

K's: I will program the machine shop to make 950 barrels, according to sensors we have 939 AR's still in stock here. I have 2 very talented pink Spiders here who want to build stuff called J&K. We have thousand of pounds of powder and millions of primers in stock. We should be able to do some testing on various designs to shoot .223 necked down. Or create brass cases from scratch. All the equipment is here. We kept the U.S. Marshal's in ammo for decades, so we have a lot of stock.

Liza: Before we leave for Bio-City, I am going to see if I can teleport some others here.

Little Brother: Liza has left the building.

Little Brother: Liza has brought 2 very pink spiders named Annie.

Little Brother: Liza has left the building.

Little Brother: Liza has brought 2 very pink spiders named Kel and is too tired to continue. The crew is riding back your way Jon.

[5 minutes later.]

Jon: Hi ladies, I am sure the K's have a list 5 miles long for you.

Kel: We are stopping to get some clothes and then on our way. We never met the K's and Annie are our children. We are about the youngest may be that is why we are back to normal Spider abilities so quick. We just pray for the Octopi.

Jon: Good idea, I need to start public prayers at every meal, like the old days. I am heading to the Machine Shop. Can all the Spiders meet me there first so I can look over all the ammo making equipment and get it cleaned and lubricated?

[Loudly.] I need a few humans in about 2 hours, whoever knows anything about guns and ammo. If anyone is in here please meet me there.

[Jon pointing the direction.]

Larry: Jon, would it be okay to have a worship service this Sunday, if possible?

Jon: Absolutely. We will broadcast it over the speakers and even if people can't attend, they can still sing and pray where they are and we can get the Lord's Supper to them with a little planning ahead of time. I can do the prayers and lead singing, since it looks like we are the only 2 men here.

Larry: Everyone here is a Christian, except for a very few of the younger kids born after Doom's Day.

Jon: That is great to here. I am sure we have cases of Modern Literal Version Bibles in here somewhere. All of my people were Christians when I knew them previously. But the Cave Christians were always, singing, saying prayers, etc. It was great evangelism with the help and even Zombies, we came to find out later.

Then when something offended them someone heard about it. More than a thousand times, they send email to every TV actor, director, sponsor and owners or CEO's. More than one TV show or paid service died because of it. Many times they shutdown social media networks because the owners couldn't remove the truth they posted fast enough. They acted like Christians should.

[Location: Machine Shop. Time: 2:30 PM]

Trigger: We are exactly what you are looking for. This is Cherri. I am Trigger. We were both competition shooters and reloaders since childhood. Where is this equipment at?

Jon: Nice to meet you and hoped for.

[The golf-cart comes to what appears to be a blast door.]

Jon: Open says me. Super secret password.

[The door opens to reveals a massive machine and ammo shop.]

Jon [surprised]: It grew, wow a lot, a whole lot. Hi spiders. Everyone introduce yourselves and spiders please help them get whatever equipment the humans would like cleaned, working and lubricated. Okay you look like you are about to pee your pants, what am I missing?

Kel: Buttons on this wall. Clean, Lube, Dial which Ammo. Dial amount. Clock shows when to come back. Note: Turn vacuum pumps on for when loading starts.

But since we are going to create a new one, we will need to figure out how to make the prototypes while the equipment is doing the prep work.

[Jon kisses both of the Kel's on their foreheads.]

Jon: Bye everyone. Anyone who needs to leave with me hop on.

[All the spiders but Kel.]

Jon: Why Kel?

Kel: We were Karen and Cassandra Kelly. Our great grandfathers started Kelly Tech Guns.

Jon: Have fun.

Annie: Drop us off here. We are going to make the barrels once we have the cartridge but in the meantime plan to do some cleaning up. This place was left in a hurry. We are also looking for some out of the box thinking. Where are all the 50 Cals or .429's we retired from the Scooters before going to lasers? Kel, are there any 50 or .429 Gatling guns in storage there?

Kel: Checking. [Long pause.] Found guns, checking. [Long pause.] Found tons of ammo.

Annie: Moms were builders of Bio-City and we remember gun turrets there, because Kathy an Octopi would let us jump back and forth between them as she would spin them. I wonder if they are still there?

{Jon telepathically to Liza: Can you hear me daughter?

Liza to Jon: Yes. Mostly.

Annie to All: Top floor windows.

Jon to All: Please look on top floor for gun turrets. We have lots of 50 cal's.

Liza to All: Checking.

[Long pause.]

Bring them. 4 hours and I can have this system in operation, there is an old style Little Daughter here. The truck is going back for more barrels and we have 240 turrets, so keep one laser and add 160 of 50's. All the humans have to do is keep attaching ammo belts. Very little training and they could exchange bad units quickly. Next trip bring 80 extras and more ammo. We will not have the time to rebuild all the Gatling guns. Lower the rate of fire. This system is too old to have variable speed gearing actions. Our targets will be moving turtle speed slow in comparison to jet planes. Remind me that peace should never be considered a time to be lax on weapons, if the K's figure out how to get back in time. }

[Location: Main Cave, under the Water Towers.]

Liza: Nice office even if I do say so. Here is Dad's shorts and his pocket knife.

Jon: What are you doing?

Liza: You said in blood.

Jon: I was not being serious.

Liza: I know but it really is a good way to get the message across.

[Liza proceeds to write an apology on the cave wall in blood that is in front of the K's.]

The K's: What blood type are you Liza?

Liza: I am not for sure, but O same as most spiders and Dad I would estimate.

K's: Jon hook us back up. We need Silver. We need some of Skate's super vitamin B potion.

Jon: Are you nuts?

K's: No we need to make more blood. Shoot yourself with the Super Vitamin B potion too. Do you not remember that Octopi are vampires?

Jon: I see where you are going with this; but how long before we can tap the spiders?

K's: Melody, time to take a submarine bath. What blood type are you?

Melody: O positive. But I am healthy now.

K's: So you can be a blood factory, so pump her with Skate's potion too.

We have to keep about 20 humans in the tubs for 3 solid days. They should give us enough blood for a complete experiment.

Jon: I will start working on the human population and go find some of Skate's potions. Cut it in half for the humans?

K's: One third, and we will see if problems, before we go up. If they were well $\frac{1}{2}$ to $\frac{2}{3}$ would be about right for their current underweight selves.

Jon: Oh how short sighted of me. What would it take for us to broadcast all around the world on any and all radio frequencies?

K's: Slight redo of the electronics on our Mess Radar which the men have been patching and big towers with antennas on top and solar power supplies. The catch is how to make sure they can't end up in the belly of some AI.

J&K: We know how to do that, when you are ready to take them in the field we need each one for about an hour to booby trap it. Why not use the high voltage towers; it is not like they have electricity in the wiring any longer?

Jon: We need to announce to the world to not cut the wire, but trace back to the source of the electricity if live and cut there. Put your spider minds to use to figure out a way for humans to kill AI's.

K's: Listening. Burn them. They can't take prolonged heat; 15 minutes in flame the soldier models we found will croak. So put out how to make flame throwers. Use dead AI's pieces for shields. The non-magnetic pieces are best; they were the first breed.

Jon: Are they running out of good materials?

Liza: Yes. It looks that way.

Jon: We need to start dropping in Black Hole Balls or get the autoloaders working. Anything else for now? Remember to pray, I fairly certain this is not the way Jesus wanted His creation to go into extinction.

Liza: I am going to see if I can get 1 more set of spiders here from the Spider Cave. Then I am crashing in the Bedroom.

Jon: As soon as I get someone to distribute the potion, I am meeting Ester in the Bedroom.

Liza: No way will you wake me. Cindy left to cut a few more substations from Bio City. She will be here in about 2 hours. She is pulling massive information out of my brain. Never taught my twin embryo could have ever been used; it just quit growing.

J&K: The Storage building had 4 interesting supplies: Black Hole Grenades, 4 scooters, 12 satellites and 10 Symth mid-sized electric cars. We are going to sleep and then at dawn see about getting

supplies over here from there with some humans. Weird, we were human yesterday.

Jon: How many grenades?

J&K: 500 to 1000, could not tell for sure.

Jon: Send some to the Bio-City to help take out the AI's military vehicles.

[Jon & Liza leave. Liza gets on the Main Table and brings back the M's and Terri-Kay an Octopi. Then Liza goes to the Bedroom and crashes. Jon shows some women the dispenser computer in the Ballroom so they can doze some of the more pinkish ones. Cindy comes back gets a shot of B potion and goes to the Bedroom to spoon next to her sister.]

[Day 5. Location Entrance Cave. Time: 6 AM.]

Little Brother: Janella, Misty and the C's have arrived.

[Location the K's tub office under the Water Towers.]

Jon: K's, here is your syringe filled with sterile water.

K's: Send the C's to us. Tell them to bring two chairs.

[The K's, drive off. The C's see that they're going somewhere and they follow them. Janella and Misty see Jon and run toward him. Janella gets there first, and lays this really big kiss on Jon. Misty just smiles, and as soon as Janella is done, she walks up, jumps up and bear hugs Jon.]

Jon: Come on with me ladies. I'm so glad to see both of you. We need to go put the K's back in their Black goo bathtub soon.

[Misty, Jon, and Janella get on some golf-carts and start traveling toward where the K's and their weird office is, Melody is already in there. The C's arrive in the room. Melody slowly gets behind the C's, pulls up the syringe and shoots both of them with the water. The C's flip around and see what was done, then a look of fear on their faces when they turn back around to the K's.]

K's: Nice. Thank you very much Mini Misty. [Pause.] The next time, you will be human. If you, do not mind, will you fill us in on how the rank is in the current situation?

Liza: I am first. Misty is second. Very thin line there since we both discuss everything. Two octopi, you don't know, would be next. They took the place of the C's. Melody is next. Would you like me to continue?

The K's: The C's spin around slowly; we want to look at you. One of you is 7 pounds more than the other one that is pathetic. From this time on, you are going to become know as Piglet one and Piglet two. Do the two of you even have enough strength to pick us up and put us in the bathtub of Black?

The C's: We can't, but most spiders would not be able to lift you up and put you in that tub without difficulty. None of us are that strong anymore. Most humans can't lift their own weight, either. Most spiders weigh about 125 pounds now, except us, the fat ones. But the Black is helping everyone a lot so soon Spiders should be kind of normal again.

The K's: Do you all still know how to build something?

The C's: What would you like us to build?

The K's: Look around the machine shop and see if you can get us a nice large, shallow bathtub that about eight of us can fit in. If you can't find something to adapt, make one.

C's: Would you like anything else right now?

K's: No, except the two of you to get out of our sight. Go to work!

[Everyone in the room is trying their best not to feel sorry for the C's because they know that wouldn't be the right thing to do. Even though they really do feel sorry for them because the K's expressions are far worse than their words to the C's. The C's leave the area.]

Liza: That was heated.

K's: Little Brother. Please monitor the C's and make sure they don't do anything dangerous to themselves and notify us if you think anything is going to happen or has. Thank you.

Little Brother: I will do that for you.

Jon: Okay, we're going to get you in the bathtub until we get a bigger bathtub.

Little Brother: Cindy is coming towards you, she needs to talk with you Jon.

Jon: Let's get them in the bathtub, and then we can walk out to meet her.

[They get the K's into the bathtub, and they go into the Main Entrance Cave.]

[Location: Main Entrance Cave.]

Jon: Misty, you have a nice granddaughter. Little Brother. Please direct Cindy to the proper place. We need to go get food, then come back here and have ourselves a powwow.

Misty: I know where the Euphoria drug is. We don't have any weed.

Jon: Cute, kid. That seems really strange to say, you are older than me, no, not quite.

[The C's meet them on the way.]

C's: We don't want to say anything to the K's but we don't know how to drive a fork lift or some of the other equipment. Would you help us not to look worse than we already do?

Janella: I will show you how to use the cranes, we will impress them with your genius.

[Janella turns to Jon and lays another big kiss on him. Then the C's and her leave.]

Jon: Bye Bubble Butt.

[Janella bends slightly and wiggles her butt. Jon just laughs.]

[Location: Dinning Area.]

Jon: What happened to the Death Star?

Liza: When they developed the high speed missiles, we didn't have anything that could evade them and lost a lot of spiders and scooters, most of the fighters too. We could not send anything up, so we could not get supplies to them. I am guessing they are dead. They understood the situation. We don't talk about it.

Jon: But is it still intact?

Misty: We can see it with a telescope right now or for sure tonight. It is directly above us.

Jon: Little Brother, can you see anything around the Death Star from here?

Little Brother: It seems to be intact and the Solar Panels also. Power from the Solar Panels are keeping all of it in orbit. There is no energy trace around the Death Star that I can find.

[Jon's phone rings. It's Cindy.]

Jon: Hi, kid.

Cindy: I forgot; the power lines in 2 of the largest sub-stations are cut, you can start phrase 2 of our little war in southern Indiana. Our AI's are on solar power only now in Indiana up to South Bend.

Jon: I need some history, were the C's ever builders?

Misty: Not really, the K's were afraid of dying at any given time and the C's and the B's fell into our laps. The B's were really not physicist like the K's but bio-engineers who came in originally for the Genetics Lab. I am guessing the super fast missiles might have been their stolen research. But we fast tracked the C's. We guess now, looking back everyone expected too much of them too quickly.

{Jon telepathically to the K's: Janella is helping them with your task.

K's to Jon: Thanks. They need to hit bottom. They are not there yet.

Liza to K's: Tell them about Cynthia.

K's to Jon and Liza: Good idea. We need to dissect the others missiles too. If someone could bring them here for us. No Melody, you get to stay in here. [Bela Lugosi accent.] We need to suck your blood, hee, hee.

Jon to K's: Bye Nut.

K's to Jon: He called us one.

[Purring.]}

K's: Little Brother, where are you at shooting down satellites?

Little Brother: Clear skies in my range. If any drift into range, they will be melted also. Ultraviolet is slightly up, so in many ways this was a great success. Too bad they de-commissioned the South and North Pole weather stations to promote Global Warming. We could really see how effective this has been.

{Ester telepathically to Jon: Feel better after last night?

Jon to Ester: Yes, my Silver is up. How are you doing at the Earthen Globes?

Ester to Jon: One had a little Bio-vitamin and one was empty. I wonder if any Trash Balls are outside.

Jon telepathically to Cindy and Melody: Sit down I am going to send you a burst of information. Do what you can, if you can. Let me know later. }

[Time: 10 AM.]

Little Brother: Jon we have 6 spiders who arrived from Texas inside now. 2 were soaking in Black in the trunk.

Jon: Thank you Little Brother, I think I will go meet them.

[Jon gets up and heads toward the entrance to the Main Cave from the Entrance Cave.]

Jon: Hi spiders.

Spiders: Hi dad.

Jon: All of you or just some of you? A new clad colors for opposite coordinating colors of bright blue and green.

Janni's: Our original twins were killed. So we twinned together but honor their memories.

Jon: I plan on honoring the dead by putting AI heads on their graves with the word: "Extinct".

Spiders: Five of us are your children. 1 Janni is not. Are the C's still alive?

Jon: Yes, why did you think the K's were going to choke them to death?

Spiders: We were not for sure. It is a time of war and the C's deserted. The B's were able to clone your sperm, it is good enough to use for Spiders, not humans.

After we win the war, I am wondering if all humans but men will be invited? We have 40,000 doses to help bring us back to sort of normal.

Jon: Wow, the B's were busy. The K's have a plan to bring them back into the fold. Everyone should have a chance to repent, please pray for the C's and all of us.

Spiders: Where are the K's? We need to meet with them, see what we need to fix or build.

Jon: Under the Water Towers in a make shift office. Good food is in the Dining area. Tubs and barrels of Black are everywhere. I see Alli's are very pink.

Alli's: We feel very rested and almost normal. We haven't felt normal for years.

BeeBee's: If you have something for us to do. We will stay up after we eat and meet with the K's.

Jon: The turret in the front malfunctioned a lot during the attack here. The human men fixed them. But not right now, but probably a good place to start and any other parts of our Cave Globe. The K's are soaking in a pool of Black with the C's & Melody. Janella is there too. I am going there soon so

eat first, catch a nap. They all should be up in about 4 hours

Janni's: Taking a nap too?

Jon: I doubt it, I think I will be going over our current inventory. I keep thinking I am missing something. 4 hours is my normal. It has been that way most days of my life since the 40 days that started all of this Kingdom. I have about 1 year before this re-image dies or less.

[The 6 spiders go eat and split up and find tubs and park them outside of the K's temp office. Jon goes to the K's office room and ends up falling asleep.]

[1 PM. All of them are awake and talking, coated in Black head to toe, and sitting on air beds on the floor. Jon sits behind Janella and puts his arms around her.]

Jon: So the Black is finally sticking to all of you spiders, even though I see some gray areas which need to go. But why are you awake?

The K's: We think it is combo effect of Skate's vitamins, go-juice, and the drops of Silver we have been giving them. Also, we are guessing you want Janella to fly the Pipsqueaks 5 engine scooter. We have been devising a plan.

Janella: But you have to convince me Jon.

[She gets up and holds out her hand to Jon. He grabs it and stands up. Then they walk away.]

K's: Taking bets, 30, 60, 120 minutes?

Cindy: You all are sick. What was their relationship before Jon died?

C's: They were twinned for decades.

Cindy: Human and a spider? I didn't think that possible.

K's: Jon is not exactly human. That is why you're still alive. You're his and Lesa kid.

6 Spiders from Spider Cave: Hi, we are...

K's: Come join our clan, we need builders to be in our clan.

Alli's: I thought all of you kept too many super secrets. Even Liza and Misty don't know them.

K's: Well do you want to join or not?

Terri-Kay: Yes, of course all of us want to.

[The first four touch head to head with one of the K's or C's. Then the rest of the spiders.]

K's: Jon gave all of you the turrets to rebuild that may not be working, good idea. We recorded the way we rebuilt them and put it in the archive; just ask Little Brother if you need to watch. See if you can find some humans who you could teach how to copy one and start making us more. Little Brother, how is the satellite destruction going?

Little Brother: Still all clear. If there was just a few of our own satellites in orbit for a good visual further satellites could be shot down.

K's: Thank you Little Brother. C's go with the clan and all of you look over the long range laser cannons too make sure they are in good shape and see what it would take to make the beam much wider to use against missiles. See if you can get any ideas on how to make another one quickly or improve on the two we have. They didn't come from Smythville originally. We almost never used this cannon because we seldom needed to remove something in space. A scooter usually got the junk or the Death Star crew. Sorry I forgot you all don't talk about them. We are going to have to revive the Death Star soon, if possible. We need satellites to look around. Sorry but we need to rest some more. Our backs are really hurting.

[The K's stand up, with help, and belly flop into the pool of Black and go completely submerged. The 8 spiders take the new tub off of the overhead crane hooks and lay it down and fill it close to the top with the Black from the barrels. They step in and are covered mostly from head to toe. They

leave.]

[45 Minutes later.]

Then Janella & Jon return and reach in the tub and pull out Melody. They roll her over the sand bags and she coughs a few times and the Black starts flowing out of her lungs. Then they sit in the tub and lift up the K's and talk to them telepathically.]

{Jon telepathically to Annie: How are all of you coming? Come join the K's & C's clan.

Annie to Jon: Great we found our new cartridge. We will start productions very soon and have now 1000+ rifles. We are going to ship both barrels because we have a major inventory of armor piecing which should work just find on the low grade metal soldiers. }

{Jon and Janella telepathically to the K's: When you think you are able, would you check out the 5 engine scooter that Pipsqueaks used and see if you can make it Janella approved? They could beat her in a race but not by much before they passed out from the G-Forces. We have to get some satellites of our own up and see what kind of shape the Death Star is in.

K's to All: Okay boss. No one would take our bets.

Janella to All: Good thing you are hurt. I would punch you for that.

[Janella is smiling ear to ear which the K's can't see.]

[She pushes the K's completely under again. Janella waves her hand over the tub and the gray scum goes off to the floor.]

Jon to All: Save your energy. We will be needing it later.

Janella to All: We need them in perfect health. They are far more important than I am.

K's to All: The C's put to rest about 100 clones of Cindy, Cynthia's twin used for the high speed missiles. It didn't phase them. We will keep trying to get them back. We need a rocket launcher and give the Metal Monsters their missiles back. }

Jon: Cindy and Melody you both still look like not quite ripe tomatoes. Remember you have baby's skin. It rips, tears, punctures and scraps easily. You might want to keep a pair of gloves handy and wear thick long sleeve overhauls for a while. We need to see if blood from all of us will help the Octopi.

Cindy: I haven't had such a good rest as long as I can remember.

Melody: Not since childhood for me at least. I would be here a week if there wasn't a war going one.

Jon: Go to full dose on Skate's potion. We need to get about 5 pints just for Liza as a good test.

Melody: You should not show favoritism or in this case lack of it.

Jon: Misty is fine. We really need Liza at full to show the others. Confidence is low right now in that the best we can do against the AI's is to die well. I have some more confidence boosters planned soon beside 10,000 already dead.

[Jon and Janella leave.]

Misty: What can I do?

Jon: Can you fill me in on how the AI's talk to each other and how we can confuse them.

Misty: We truly don't know.

Jon: Surely they are not telepathic. Otherwise they would have had access to Big Brother and tried to release him on us.

Misty: I will work with the K's, we haven't had the C's at peak or anyone else for a long while. I ran an IQ test and the average of the spiders is down at least 50 points from before the war. Nobody seems to work well any more.

Jon: The Day of AI Judgement, where was everyone?

Misty: In the middle of the largest Invitation in New Smythville, Indiana. In a matter of minutes the only ones standing were Spiders & Octopi; everything and everyone around us were dead. It took us 3 days to get back here from Smythville.

Jon: Smithville?

Misty: Oh, you wouldn't know. Our town which grew well with sick people and when the Bio-City was constructed added that many more. The extra part became know as Smythville or New Smythville.

Jon: What happened to Christian City?

Misty: We had abandoned it to help with the Invitation. The Muslims somehow allied with the AI's and then just let Christian City have it. It was worse than Pearl Habor. If I had to do it all over, I will never shut down the Fusion Reactors except for maintenance. Here, that is the only thing that saved our home. They hit this place with 25 Multi warhead nuclear missiles and it barely burnt some of the leaves on the trees. But everything but Bio-City was fried. You can barely tell there was a city ever there.

[Jon goes over to the tub and grabs the K's out.]

{Jon telepathically to the K's & Misty: Did you hear that?

K's: No. We were actually out.

Jon: Sorry. But about every Spider and Octopi was NOT in the Main Cave or Christian City when the AI's hit this place with 150+ nuclear warheads.

[The K's look at each other with an intense frown.]

K's: Is anyone dying right now?

Misty: Yes, 2 spiders, the Black hasn't helped them.

K's: We need them here as soon as possible. Everyone's cells were blown apart by the gamma radiation. We need Sexpot & Lesa here and Skate; and the B's would be nice icing on the cake.

Jon: Well geniuses, figure it out.

K's: You're asking the impossible.

Jon: I always do. So did we get here by magic? Or some K's twisted physics?}

[The K's still have an intense frown. Look at each other and sink back some into the Black.]

K's: Little Brother please broadcast: Fatlings please find us at the end of the Black Cave.

[K's with help get on their twin cart and drive through the Main Cave to the edge of the Black Cave. The walls change color from granite stone with various streaks of other minerals to shiny dark black looking stone at the edge of the Black Cave as perfect of a line as you could draw. The C's arrive.]

K's: We need access to the Humble Machine Shop where the Fusion reactors are stored and the Tables.

C's: Little Brother, time please.

Little Brother: 6:02 PM.

C's: Would your record that the C's are relinquishing the rights to the Humble Files and the Humble Rights that go along with them and give full access to the K's.

[The C's look at the K's with an almost terrified expression on their faces.]

C's: Why would you name them the Humble Files? There is nothing humble about equations that could make the universe absolutely nothing. God would have to make it all over.

The K's: We never achieved the humbleness of Moses and Jesus, or at least we doubt it. But we started out as leader and commander. It almost killed us and the clan which at that time was almost 5,000 spiders. Then we looked at Jon and realized we had it all wrong, so we named the most secret

things in the universe with how you have to act to receive the respect that people will die for.

[The C's fall to the floor on their knees and look up at the K's crying.]

C's: We are sorry for all that we have done. The disgrace that we brought upon you. We will do better and act like the humble spiders we are supposed to be. We promise.

K's: Get up, we are not God.

[Slight smile on the C's face as they get up.]

[2nd Re-image.] [TOC](#)

[Location: Humble Machine Shop.]

C's: Where do we start?

K's: We need to daisy chain at least a double hexagon of fusion reactors, the 800KV if we have them, I doubt there are enough of the 2.9 Million volt ones, maybe even a whole ring. We need to achieve a star's worth of power. Little Brother, please add the C's back to the Humble Files and Rights.

C's: The power wave when we fire them up might kill every AI for many miles.

[Big smile.]

K's: Not the idea, but nice side effect anyway. We are going to recreate the B's.

[1 hour later.]

[They get all the reactors together into a complete ring. Then once powered on, the area gets bright like the a sun coming out of a thunderstorm cloud. The Nobodies land in between them.]

Me-Tis: We are helping. I figure the 2 of you can use some help; the Cave is helping. But can we have a bath first, PLEASE?

K's: Power freaks, just like us. When was the last time you had a good bath?

Mu-Tis: It wasn't a good bath, multiple lightning bolts hit us after humanity was killed, 10 years ago.

C's: Take off 1 lead furthest opposite corner, or better idea?

K's: Sound's good that is almost 5 million volts. We for sure need to get in the bunker for this. You get the farthest one. We will...

C's: We will get both. We can carry you to the bunker.

[5 minutes later the C's and K's are in a solid crystal looking like bunker. There are 2 computers in the bunker and the C's type in the commands to start the reactors. Glowing and then crackling noise starts, then lightning bolts jumping around. Me-Tis & Mu-Tis start floating in the air above the reactors and all the lightning bolts start hitting them. The glowing gets to almost sunlight and the Nobodies keep rolling around like they are in bed changing positions, the lightning keeps striking them. Me-Tis and Mu-Tis walks over and put the leads back on the other reactors and the lightning stops and they go back to light bulb like glowing.

[The K's & C's touch heads and purr. Then all of the sudden the dark black walls start growing silvery vanes in the walls and the whole area is like daylight for a few miles. They all get on the golf-cart and travel about a mile. One of the K's gets out a phone.]

[Jon's phone rings.]

Jon: Yes. That wasn't very much sleep.

[Day 6 Midnight.]

K's: We are okay. The C's are okay now. We are about to enter the Humble Lab. So use the PA if

you need us. By the way your impossibility is our command. Did we kill any AI's in the area you know of?

Jon: I will let you know, if I hear of any.

K's: Little Brother please broadcast: Everyone will feel a strange feeling and you may experience some slight dizziness or faintness. It will pass quickly. We are purging at least a five mile radius of everything AI, we think. Please everyone go to the barely lit area behind the Kitchen and between the Hydroponic Bay and the Sewage Plant and Earthen Globe, take beds or whatever you need there, maybe some of the Porta-Johns. Next you will be freaked out, because you will see people popping back into existence, many you may know and many you will not. They are nuclear images of what they were about 23 years ago. They will be freaked out a little too to see you because in their minds you will have appeared instantly from thin air.

Anyone who exists now will NOT have their previous versions appear; it's a physics thing, you know. This message is going to be repeated every minute for the next 12 hours sorry. I don't want one of us from the past thinking we are being invaded and start wiping people out. If you think you are in danger, tell those who appear to listen to the message. Jon, Liza and Misty please record the same to play alternately.

[Long pause.]

K's: It would be best to not be in the Main Cave during the next 12 hours. Maybe move some of the dining room to the back of the Kitchen. If you are closer to the Wet Cave that is an acceptable place also but not in the Shallow Cave; basically anywhere but the Main Cave, Black Cave, Hydroponics Bay, Entrance Cave and beyond in the totally dark areas. Jon can you and Misty stick around the Main Cave?

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1 ignition; about 20 minutes to full power, pulse will follow. End broadcast.

[The C's and Nobodies, start going from reactor to reactor twisting the Cobalt Diamonds into place. Then the K's & C's put on welding goggles and a welding shield over them. The K's give a signal to the C's like an invite to go ahead in front of them. They walk over to the last one and twist the top. A large force of air moves through the whole cave. A hundred people appear; then another 200, then 400 for the next few hours till the Main Cave is full of spiders, Octopi, Alexandrians, Atlantean females and humans from the past.]

[Time: 45 Minutes Later.]

{Jon telepathically to Everyone: Sorry people but World War 3 is going on and the human race has lost. We need help to defend against the AI's or Terminators if you prefer. Sexpot and Lesa I need you here.

Lesla to Everyone: We both were next to each other and we both should be here, but I am only here. Also I don't have her in my head but a faint feeling she is alive though. I can't shake it. I arrived 30 minutes ago.

Jon to Everyone: Everyone, who is NOT from the past, was blasted by massive amounts of gamma and neutron radiation and instead of being Hulk they are more like feeble humans. The K's think blood will fix the Octopi but haven't tested it yet.

Submersion in Black has helped the humans and the spiders. 2 spiders regardless are dying. The K's had an idea but they are in the Humble Lab on how to save them.

Octopi Misty is here in the future and she is not Monster that I knew in the past.

Lesla to Everyone: That is childbirth for you. I changed too.

Jon to Lesa: No good time to tell you this, Lesa, the aborted embryo which allowed you to bore Liza, was later put into a human woman right before the war by the B's. Our other kid's name is Cindy. You will like her.}

Cindy: I am right behind you. Nice dad.

Jon: Well Cindy meet your biological mom.

Lesa: Nice pink complexion. I somehow don't think I need to do my speech of how bad immortality can be.

Cindy: Yes, I am an Octopi, slowly coming up to speed.

Jon: Hi honey, Skate and good, the B's are coming this way with mechanical syringes. Huh?

B's: Where are the Pipsqueaks? We have a way to get everyone's voices out of their heads.

K's: They refused to be in the Image. Sad, we really need them now. The Pipsqueaks could be our recon for how to mount attacks. Nothing against Janella, but she is not the pilot they were.

B's: We have been reading the Humble Files and saw the day the K's died. Our future / past selves created this syrup. That is weird sounding.

B's: The Octopi produce a chemical in their brains the spiders don't have much if any. Very little tweak to make it compatible to spiders.

[Time Line Shift.]

[Jon gets a really sad look on his face and walks away from everyone toward the Chair & Main Table Alcove. Genny (Jon's wife) follows him with a very concerned look on her face. Jon walks up to the Main Table, and turns on the reactors, then sits in the Chair.]

[Location: Table's Chair. Time: 75 years prior.]

[Jon is sitting on the Chair, with Genny stretched out across his lap. Janella is laying on the back of the chair asleep. Jon grabs his head with both hands, bends down toward Genny's lap and lets out an ear curling scream. Genny helps him pick up his head and Jon is dazed and face is still showing great pain. Skate rolls in on her skates at 20 MPH, does a triple spin and lands on the floor area next to the Table and Chair. Sexpot and Lesa run there to the Table. Multiple others are in a crowd on the floor. Kala (a Winged-folk) flies to the Table and is hovering next to the Chair in mid air. Sexpot puts her hand on Jon's chest and her eyes turn silver. Jon looks up at her with a dazed look.]

Jon: What chemicals are in your brain, not in the Spiders' brains? Make them compatible to Spiders [then looking at Skate too] and get a doze for the Pipsqueaks.

Sexpot: I can't find anything wrong with you, are you okay now?

Lesa: On the Table now, medical order. Hold still I will move you.

[Lesa mentally picks up Jon from the Chair and moves him to the Table. Jon lays down. Janella runs up to him to help him if he has any more pain.]

Jon: Go get the K's and that drug made.

Lesa: I will start scanning. I called Mrs. Stitches to come here from town.

[Long pause. Genny lays next to Jon and then Janella sits down at his head and pulls him up closer.]

Janella: I didn't have any pain. I was asleep till the scream.

Lesa: Scanning. Get comfortable.

[15 minutes later Mrs. Stitches arrives and sits down next to Lesa.]

Lesa: I haven't found anything. Please take a look at him. Jon was in so much pain his scream

probably peeled a layer of granite off the walls. Did the patrolman see you speeding at 140 MPH?
Mrs. Stitches: I think he is immune. He knows if one of us is coming here in a hurry, people are probably dying. Jon during the whole 40 days, never let out a scream, even when I started to rip the black tumor from his rib bones. It took all of my strength to try and then Janella ripped it out. I now understand what is meant by Nova Frame. I never drove that fast ever.

Lesa: You have come a long way from meek and mild mannered little girl.

Mrs. Stitches: That was kind of you. I was an insecure disaster.

Lesa: Little Brother please broadcast that Jon is okay but we are continuing the scans to make sure. Of course, we will let everyone know.

[The PA systems repeat Lesa's words as if she had spoken them.]

[35 minutes later.]

Mrs. Stitches: I can't find a single thing wrong either and I know his body far better than I know my own.

Lesa: Can you take a shift in the Chair?

Mrs. Stitches: Of course, how about at his bed time.

Lesa: Jon you are staying here on the Table till bed time and sleeping here tonight.

Jon: As long as you don't get out your stone knives, I will be fine. Genny is willing to stay for a while too. Please activate the privacy screen.

Skate: I have the drug, so who gets it.

The K's: Give it to us. Pipsqueaks are coming. We are hiding now.

[Pipsqueaks jump up to the Table and sit next to the Waterfall.]

Pipsqueaks: How are you feelll... [Thump].

[The K's had come out of the waterfall and gave them a shot with the mechanical syringe and the Pipsqueaks dropped like a rock. Jon & Janella stretch them out flat and Jon is sitting in the middle of the Pipsqueaks when they awaken.]

Pipsqueaks [looking up at Jon]: Where are they? We are going to kill them.

Jon: How do you feel?

Pipsqueaks: A little headache but it is fading.

Jon: How are the voices in your head?

[Pipsqueaks roll their eyes around and their heads slightly with strange puzzled looks then frown.]

Pipsqueaks: We hear the zombies' white noise, expected. We hear you Jon, very expected. We hear the K's, not equally wanted.

[Pipsqueaks spin onto their sides and punch the K's in the gut.]

The K's: You punch hard to be so...

Pipsqueaks: Say it and we will punch you again.

The K's: Tiny.

[The K's fall back into the waterfall as they say 'Tiny' and then run around the Table, get out to the Chair and turn back around. The Pipsqueaks throw 2 crystals at the K's. The K's let them hit them.]

The K's: Ouch.

Pipsqueaks: We hear our clan in the background but we should. We can't hear Genny, Skate or anyone else close or in the cave. How long will the shots last?

Sexpot: We don't know, you will have to tell us, just like if we increase the dose or lower it what will be the effects. Skate and I made a guess.

Pipsqueaks: Lower it next time and we will see if it lasts as long or has lesser effect. What is it?

Sexpot: Octopi brain chemicals. Only some spiders have trace amounts of them in their brains.

*Pipsqueaks: Thanks everyone, even her over there. [Giving the K's a nasty look.] We may need to move our roost, maybe over top of Janella's bed.
[Everyone laughs.]*

[Location: unknown. Time: unknown.]

[An almost totally dark area with outlines of human females on what appears to be a sort of a floor with lightning all around and thunder, even some occasionally seen under the floor.]

Red Wing: What is happening?

Clara: Time has shifted. I must have made the deal with Jon.

Little Bear: You never made the deal. You only thought about making the deal.

Clara: Jon changed time. He saved his close friends from a lifetime of pain.

Dove: He can't do that. He is not ascended.

Clara: I always knew Jon was powerful. Good I made the right decision to leave this realm under his control later.

Red Wing: Are we all going to die now?

Clara: I don't think so. We will continue feeding him the future and the end of all humankind. I wonder if our previous race will survive the AI's.

[Location: Main Cave. Time: Still Day 6, Noon.]

Pipsqueaks [looking at the B's]: Thanks we need those shots soon. Should we know how they or us died?

B's: No. You won't like seeing it any more than we did. We were there when you died.

Pipsqueaks: Did we die together?

B's: Almost exactly like the K's.

[Big smiles on the Pipsqueaks faces.]

Pipsqueaks: We are going to round up some of our clan's beasties and go to the Humble Lab. I am guessing fusion reactors will be in high demand soon.

Jon: There are no beasties or winged-folk. Liza thought Clara may have saved them.

[The C's come driving up. Talk with the Pipsqueaks for a few moments and drive up to Jon. The K's eyes are silver when they look at Jon. The C's are carrying them and the C's are pinkish all over.]

K's: Sorry we needed to get through this. Now we are going to sleep it off. Can we go to your bed?

[Jon waves goodbye. The C's put them back on the golf-cart and drive toward the Bedroom.]

Lesa: They told me what to do with the dying spiders. It is a good plan. I am going to get started.

Jon: Telepathy is very limited. Not sure if defects in the humans, spiders or Octopi or the debris in the atmosphere. But I bet it will improve with 15,000 people here now or so.

Jon: Little Brother Broadcast: All of the people in the re-imaging. Please take a time to go to the humans on the other side of the Kitchen and do the customary forehead touching. Let's see if by chance we can start our telepathy working among all of us.

Lesa [loudy]: I need 10 spiders from the past to meet with me in the Medical Lab I need a pint of blood from everyone. Where is Liza, Jon? I don't feel her? She is not dead is she?

Jon: She is in the Spider Cave as are almost all of the ones who are alive now. They had to abandon this cave. But she is weak, real weak. She couldn't pick up Cindy if she needed to now.

Janella: Hi Lesa. I hate to say it, but I need to be at the front of the line. We need to get back to war.

Lesa: Is that okay Jon? I can't believe you are one of us; you turn coat.

Janella [K's like frowning with bottom lip sticking out]: That's not nice. I expect that from the Spiders but not my own kind.

[Everyone laughs.]

Jon: I will get Liza here in a few if she can amp up and teleport in. Go ahead and see if the blood fixes Janella and the other 2 spiders. Janella and the Pipsqueaks have jobs only they can do.

Lesa: Here, Janella, let me scan you.

[Lesa puts her hand on her chest, closes her eyes, then reopens her eyes. They are silver. Lesa jumps back and her face gets white as a sheet.]

[Unknown Betrayal.] [TOC](#)

Lesa: Jon very private conversation, under the stairs.

[They walk over to the wall under the stairs in Ruth's old office and Lesa moves Jon against the wall and turns to look at him and away from everything else.]

Lesa: Sextpot just sent me an image of her but looking through someone else's eyes. She is chained to a wall and looks real bad. What does Liza's office look like? Are the walls raspberry, with pictures of you & Genny, then Liza and me when she was real close to 18 looking, then Sextpot, me, New Girl & Ms. Stitches in one picture, with a caption "The Deviants."

Jon: Exactly.

Lesa: Sextpot is in Liza's head. Someone has an almost direct line to know everything we do.

Jon: Look down, sing some stupid nursery rhyme and let's go to the Main Table, then lay down there.

Broadcast: B's, Misty, and Melody meet me at the Main Table, important. End.

[All proceed to gather at the Table. Jon gives a shush action to all.]

Jon: B's can the drug you gave the Pipsqueaks work on Lesa and Liza?

B's: It would work better on them but they don't have a problem with voices in their heads. Who needs it.

Lesa: Me and Liza for sure. Sextpot is alive but being controlled by someone. We are her closest and probably even in her weakened condition still are a pipe line to see everything that is going on here.

Jon: Misty, I am guessing you haven't been practicing with your swords. We need to appear to kill off Liza and Lesa dies in the whole event.

Lesa: I already know how to do this. How fast before that stuff starts to work on us?

B's: Octopi, 1 minute.

Lesa: Liza being sick and me well how much difference would you estimate before the effects?

B's: None. The drug works only on your brain, when you don't hear voices, Liza doesn't either. Liza is due here in 10 minutes. We will prepare some syringe vials.

Lesa: I have this departmentalized right now. But I would rather not have to concentrate on it. When she gets here, I am going to push her back into the Black Cave. Liza and I rehearsed over and over a scene in the highschool play until we made it better than perfect. The play was horrible but that scene was great! Two women, one chokes the other one and then a gun shot under the chin ends the other one and both are dead. Jon even made us a special gun for that scene, since blank guns can hurt someone close up.

Jon: Stay here everyone. Broadcast: 2 Octopi and 4 spiders meet me at the Main Table Area.

[Location: Floor Table Area. Time: 12:45 PM.]

[Jon leaves and instructs the Octopi to go ahead with the spiders to the Spider Cave to remove the audience from the scene. Everyone else leaves and prepares. Sound of thunder and Liza appears at the back of the Main Cave on the Floor Table, Lesa pushes her back and both disappear.]

[Location: Texas, Spider Cave. Time: 1 PM]

[Lisa and Lesa appear on Sexpot's old Table in the Spider Cave. Two spiders are already there and inject both of them at the same time with the B's mind altering drug; duck down and start counting backwards with just their lips. Only Lesa can see them.]

Lesa: I can't believe you and Sexpot are giving us up! The two of you were always rivals, who could do the best, who is the smarter, who could get Jon's affection the most. Who could make the other one look bad or inferior.

[Liza gets a blank look on her face, then an angry look and starts toward Lesa.]

Lesa: So the two of you teamed up so you could completely destroy the family and all that we have done. We are all hypocrites now.

Liza: Yes I did it, so what. If it ends you and dad. I will be happy. We both will be happy.

Lesa: No I will kill you first, then Sexpot.

[Lesa grabs Liza by the throat with both hands. Lesa looks at her eyes. They are silver and even her color blue part is silver.]

Liza: I will kill you.

[Liza puts a 9mm pistol under Lesa's chin and pulls the trigger. Both fall to the floor. Liza looking up at the ceiling and then slowly closes her eyes. Lesa staring off at the wall and slowly closes her eyes.]

Spiders: Time.

Liza: You played my part rather well. I like the Hypocrites. We Christians know that means a pretender. So how is your chin?

[Lesa spits out the bullet on the floor, wiggles her face around and all the blood is gone.]

Lesa: It hurts; the bullet stopped under my tongue as expected.

Liza: Who is watching us?

Lesa: Do you hear the Octopi in your head or even me?

Liza: No. I don't.

Lesa: Sexpot was in your head but is being controlled by someone or something. We just cut off communications. She flashed a picture of her chained up to a wall in a deep cave via someone else's eyes.

Liza: That explains too much of what has been going on. So how long does this drug last?

Lesa: 4 days was the original drug. Don't know for sure if the B's changed it or not, but they gave it to the Pipsqueaks earlier, I guess we find out from them. But I am guessing we are going to have some serious redecorating soon so we will be unhearable, either or both ways.

[Lesa's face goes blank but hears Sexpot in her head.]

Sexpot: Don't worry I will eat your black heart right after I pull it out of that cyborg body. You just killed by best friends. I will make you pay. You tin plated black hearted abomination.

Lesa: Sexpot just told me: "Don't worry I will eat your black heart right after I pull it out of that cyborg body. You just killed by best friends. I will make you pay. You tin plated black hearted abomination."

Liza: Black hearted as in literally a black heart. That can only be an Atlantean male or Ms. Morals. I know Ms. Morals and her kind disappeared but they have nothing to gain ever by killing off mankind. They can't reproduce now at all even with Skate's drugs from the radiation. But I thought for sure we tracked down all the survivors of Atlantis and killed them, decades ago.

Lesa: One of the original courtroom, the commander of their army, was thought to have been killed by the others, maybe not. Being a cyborg might have kept him alive longer. We have more questions than answers as usual. But I need to be somewhere else to get a triangle idea of location. Oh and by the way here have some of my blood you spilled.

[Lesa smears the blood off her top onto Liza's arm.]

Lesa: Can you absorb it?

Liza: No. I can't. Are you compromised still?

Lesa: No. Sexpot and I had a partition ability, others never seemed to acquire. Let's call the Main Cave see if the B's or K's have any ideas.

[Lesa and Liza get up off the floor and the spiders too and walk to Liza's Office.]

[Location: Spider Cave, Liza's Office.]

Liza: Main Cave come in.

Misty: Funny sister. Did you get it pulled off?

Lesa: Pretty sure of it. Inform Jon please.

Misty: What did you see when you looked at Janella inside?

Lesa: That she is 5-7% dead. She is carrying around dead tissue almost like scar tissue.

Misty: The K's put her legs through one of the disintegrators and she had all kinds of holes show up. Now that makes sense, those were dead parts being ejected. She can't absorb the blood like you and Sexpot used to do after surgeries. But the K's have her legs wrapped in blood soaked gauze. It actually is working. She is walking around right now. But then that could be her stubborn Jon streak showing. I think we need to exchange staff. The healthy spiders and humans go there and ship people there back here. Then all the sick Octopi should rotate out too. I'll be back. They are doing something with Janella. Oh, I put a dress code into effect, since we will have lots more men sooner or later. I told Ester to stay veiled.

Lesa: Is Mia, Katie or Crystal back yet? Get them started on the transfers.

[A few minutes later.]

Misty: They put her in a half filled tub of Black. She was a spider, so maybe the Black will help her now. Different news to report. The K's crazy snap shot was done when almost everything in the Main Cave was completely full. It was dad's 82rd birthday, remember?

Oh no, Dad is not sterile; he doesn't know.

We now have a full armory, full drug cabinets, 2000 - scooters, 60 plus - F101, F102 and F1-11's, even the F-103, they named 'Democrat President' before they put it into an Earthen Globe. I need to tell them to make it into parts now. The humans had taken all the dead freezers with rotten food to the Earthen Globe. So we now have full working freezers of food everywhere. So how soon are you coming back? Beware we have 3 bratty kids, I saw their eyes looking at me; Ester has to be pregnant again with lots and lots. Ester has been helping dad's Silver levels.

Lesa: Ship the brats to the Spider Cave and Bio-City. We are taking the long way back. Sexpot has managed to communicate with me twice. I am hoping a third location will help me pin point where she is or at least which direction for starters. We are going by the Henry's Invitation Center here in Texas in case we need to speed teleport there quickly. We will cut the power there if there is any and

one other place on the way.

Misty: The Pipsqueaks are flying the 5 engine out shortly with 3 satellites in the back. We are going to be able to at least see a little outside so Little Brother can shoot down AI controlled satellites better than he may have missed. So we will see you soon. IF the AI's don't try to shoot the 3 down. We have lots more to get up.

Liza: We will be leaving in about 30. Bye.

Misty: Bye, stay safe, Godspeed.

Jon: Broadcast: All clan heads, meeting in Counsel Area in 1 hour if you can make it; Janella and Pipsqueaks too.

[Meanwhile.]

[Spider to Human.] [TOC](#)

[Location: Medical Area.]

[The 2 spiders that are not healing are there.]

Ester: We are going to give both of you the 'become human' drug. Then the idea is the Black should work on a human and possibly some other potions Skate comes up with.

Spiders: Dying in a few weeks or human again; neither are good options.

Ester: You should re-twin once you're better. Hop in the whirlpool.

Spiders: Okay. But where is the water? Just kidding.

Ester: Look at me.

[Two spiders from behind inject them with the serum.]

Spiders: We hate feeling pain...

[They fade off. In a few minutes, they wake up look around the room and ceiling then at each other.]

Spider 1: It worked. I hated being human. When the C's talked to us, we cut them off and said, 'When and how?'

Spider 2: I hope I don't get my ulcers back before we re-twin. How long before that is even possible?

Ester: 1 week probably.

Spider 1: Boo.

[2 other spiders pick up a 55 gal. barrel of black and pour it in.]

Spider 2: I remember when we could pick that up too. It is only 450 pounds.

Ester: I am going to submerge both of you. When you wake up remember you have to push your heads up to be able to see but unless you need to talk keep your nose below the Black.

Spider 1: My stats look bad on that monitoring screen.

[She fall off and sinks under the black slowly.]

Ester: She is in a comma.

Spider 2: I hope she wakes back up from it. I am not sure I can twin with someone else. I am going under now. Bye. Don't wake me if she dies.

Ester: We will try and keep her around for you. Goodnight. If you are feeling pain and need some Euphoria, hold up 2 fingers. We have you hooked up. I doubt you will get hungry till you really are on the mend. Goodnight.

[Location: Black Cave, Meeting Area, Round table.]

Jon: First our prayer. Father please allow our minds to open up thoughts of what is best for all of your people. Please, forgive us of our sins, and help us make decisions that will always be best to make your kingdom stronger. In Christ's name we pray this. Amen.

C's, B's or K's first.

B's: Janella is showing improvement; but too early to be for sure of success. The spiders and humans are showing great improvement and hope on erasing the past 10 years of damage. Some still have Strontium deposits but we think a Disintegrator Screen could at least remove all the deposits in the arms and legs and they will regenerate quickly. Then the rest should not be a real problem. A little radiation is actually good for humans just like plants.

C's: We should have enough fusion reactors available soon to guard the entire area from ALL types of energy weapons including our own lasers. The Sub clan are doing a great job; we barely need to pay attention to what they are doing.

Misty: Sorry K's, but I think we need to keep in mind, we need to exchange all personnel out of here to replace the Spider Cave people.

K's: I am not sure why we need to keep a large amount of staff there once we get the fusion reactors installed.

Misty: We still have the AI's about 3-5 months away. The Spider Cave needs a lot of prep for that battle just to keep them from getting what is inside.

Little Brother: Pipsqueaks have landed and are coming this way. Satellites are in place and I am linked. Shooting to resume with the 3 long range lasers now.

T's: The clan put together a third gun and have it mounted. We need a better next job.

C's: I am glad you're here; you always did a better job keeping jobs going than we ever could.

Pipsqueaks: Bad news they still have fast missiles. They were easy for us to out run them. But still afraid of crossfire with the limited radar we have now so we didn't attempt to do any playing with them. Janella will be in the 4 engine, once it can be rebuilt for her.

T's: We are arming the men at Bio City well. They are healing nicely. New Girl is there teaching Gorilla Warfare.

Jon: T's, catch us some fast missiles, time to give whomever is inside peace.

T's: Okay to get more cobalt diamonds out of storage?

Jon: Whatever you need. If we get low on something let everyone know. I doubt we will need to ration anything yet. So eat, drink and be merry, because tomorrow our enemies die.

Ms. Stitches: That is not the Bible quote, but I do like the twist.

T's: We thought we should cannibalize some engines off some scooters to create some twin engine and three engine and start seeing if some of the new pink spiders can fly them.

Alpha: The Nuclear Sub-clan has completed the 20th fusion reactor, so they are ready for inspection.

Cindy: I am working with one of the spider clans and we should have at least 4 more satellites ready in a few hours if the Pipsqueaks are able.

Pipsqueaks: Sure. How are you feeling Janella?

Janella: Better. But no parlor tricks today like juggling Pipsqueaks.

Pipsqueaks: We can't help it that your mother fed you steroids so we can't juggle you either.

[Everyone laughs.]

Misty: Liza & Lesa are taking the long way back going to the Henry's old Invitation Center in Texas. Being like my father, I would love to have a way to guard them. The Octopi who are from the past would like to see if they can stop one of the fast missiles. Any ideas?

Janella: Can you get me a 3-5 engine scooter ready? I will take a couple passengers Jane & Jamie; they were spiders and should be able to take the G forces. I am able to fly out and fly back to bait some missile.

T's: We are going to leave; we are on speaker phone. I think we can get Janella's craft build quickly if we temporarily pull some F101 pieces.

Misty: Pull the pieces from the F-103. In my past the K's named it the 'Democrat President' and it ticked them off so badly it went straight into the Earthen Globe.

Jon: Little Brother while scanning all the radio traffic, have you gleaned any useful info about our enemy?

Little Brother: Southern California is where they seem to be producing new AI's and equipment now. They only used cruise missiles there and the whole area still smells like rotting flesh and garbage. California and Houston area is where the AI's are coming from heading to the Spider Cave. Detroit and Manhattan also are AI strongholds. These seem to be the only places where the AI's actively pay any real attention to the humans, killing most on sight, they are not using very many bullets. Jon is probably right on, 'They are running low on ammo.'. Detroit is the smallest.

Misty: More Octopi would like to be in the experiments, including myself.

B's: We are trying to find out why you are not vampires any longer. Ester has 2 Octopi hooked up to her plants. If we find that works, we would probably have a one day quick cure for 2-4 at a time. But I think we need to start running everyone from the past through the Disintegrator Screens to make sure they are clean before drawing blood.

Skate: We are not finding any reason why anyone survived the gamma radiation when it was so strong. It killed all the humans and my people in seconds. Athenians were immune to Globe type amounts of radiation. Let alone why they are now holding onto bad tissue. The MRI's are being examined as we speak. What seemed odd was the people underneath were very uncomfortable.

K's: Did anyone by chance do a Cat Scan?

B's: No. But I will get someone on it now.

Ms. Stitches: Send some to the Main Table. Let me scan them since that is about my only purpose right now.

K's: I just told a couple of spiders to test the powder that came from Janella's legs for chemical analysis. Janella, we hate to put you through more right now, but would you be the Cat Scan patient?

Janella: Whatever will help. Bye all.

B's: We will go with.

C's: Us too.

Jon: How are the food and food production going since we will soon have close to 20,000 here.

Kitchen Spiders: We have over 2 years in the freezers of meat. We could butcher all the cattle in the Farm Cave once we get the genetic material stored. We have been talking with some of the Athenians who are back and think we should clone all of them and after the AI's are gone plant all of the clones that are not close relatives in the wild around the U.S.

Jon: As soon as we think we have the super fast missiles resting in peace. We need to get as many satellites up as possible with our standard good radar, internet and secured phone. I want to see how we are going to play offense. I am sick of being sitting ducks in someone else's game.

B's: Broadcast: Misty find us 10 patients. We think we have a possible solution to the lack of vampire problems.

Erin: My sub clan of Octopi are coming and Misty makes 10. We are medical Octopi. It would be nice to use our talents right now guessing there is going to be a large influx of humans sooner or

later.

Cara: Since I too am about out of a job, please use me for gunner if you need one or something else.

Jon: A second Death Star. Little Brother work with the T's. Look through the records to find out what happened in the 20 years since the design to find out what was modified in the peaceful years to the Death Star.

T's: We have lots of various parts and such here but we don't have the raw material.

Jon: The Earthen Globes are still spinning. One should have plenty stored up, we have had it emptying for a few days maybe. We have multiple cities around us that are trash dumps now, once we can get the Scooters and F-111's in the air. Get with Annie for these little 17 caliber bullets that will punch into the insides of the AI's. How many black hole grenades do we have to share with the humans? Cindy or Melody can you find where to give this stuff away on the radio? We will go in force in case the AI's are there too. Later humans will be the next day, so we can clean the area first.

[Octopi Guinea Pigs.]

B's: Jon come meet our newest vampire.

[They leave and Jon goes to the Medical Area. Jon walks up behind Ester & Jamie and wrap his arms around them. They are shooting watered down blood on Janella & Misty.]

Jon: Sorry I have not been able to talk with the 2 of you. What is in the blood?

Ester: We added plasma. One keeps the skin soft while they absorb the good ingredients from the blood. Keep watching they are about to become hideous looking soon.

[About 20 minutes later. Boils start showing up all over their bodies.]

Jon: I didn't expect that but it makes perfect sense, this is how our body gets rid of stuck debris. I remember those too well for weeks.

[Misty and Janella start scratching all over.]

Misty: The cure is almost as bad as the disease. I know how Job felt and you Dad.

Janella: Can we go through one of the disintegration screens?

K's: There is one coming this way now.

[4 Spiders come in carrying the 4 corners of the screen and set it down in front of Misty & Janella. Misty puts here left arm through it.]

Misty: Do I still have an arm? I can't feel it.

[B's poke her arm with what feels like a needle.]

Misty: Ouch.

[Then pulls her arm back. It is scaly and scarred like a poor teenager's pimpled face.]

Misty: Where did you stick me?

B's: Middle finger, is it healed?

Misty: Yes, sort of, I can't squeeze any blood out but I see the spot. How big was the needle.

[The B's come out from behind the screen holding a bloody tipped scalpel up in the air.]

Janella: I can't walk on my feet they are just like gigantic boils.

[Jon picks Janella up and throws her overhead and then through the screen. 2 spiders catch her.]

Janella: Thanks ladies. My feet still hurt but no zits. I need some Silver.

Misty: Me too.

K's: Someone carry her down and put her in the Silver Pool. Put an oxygen mask on her and push her under and keep her under till she can get out on her own.

Misty: My turn. Start lining them up. C's your in charge.

C's: Thanks but we shouldn't do that.

Misty: Then share it with Melody. Satisfied with that?

C's: IF it is okay with the K's.

K's: Sure. Little Brother please transfer full control back of the Humble Files to the C's immediately.

Little Brother: Are you keeping you on with the B's?

C's: Yes.

Little Brother: You can't technically do that yet but all is done. Is there anything you would like to record or open in the Humble Files?

C's: We're back, that's all. Thanks K's.

K's: You're welcome.

Skate: I have enough heavy metal poisoning antidote for 30 Octopi. Whose first? More is coming from the Genetics Lab. The spiders have given enough blood for about 100 Octopi. We need to start getting blood from the pink humans and the pink spiders and make sure it is good.

B's: The snapshot spiders have been taking your potions so you should be able to get another pint from all of them soon. Here do us first, we are not needed for building.

Skate: Well ladies lets start hooking everyone up. Wow, the Hydroponics Bay crew just appeared. Can we send some of them to Bio-City to help get that bay running?

Ester: Genny, and Jon report to the Bedroom. We have work to do.

Jon: Since we have minds to help, B's go get Krystal out of the Crystal she was put into, please.

{Ester telepathically to Misty and Lesa: Bad timing but do you want a kid? Jon has tons of tadpoles and I will share, 40 buds so far, plus 8 hiding still.

Lesa to Ester: Yes. Maybe this time with the B's I can truly have twins.

Misty to Ester: Yes. I will start monitoring my temperature. I presume our Sperm Bank topside was destroyed so Dad is the best we have for sure. But as soon as we can find out, please do.}

C's: Let's start teleporting everyone slowly to the Spider Cave to get the sick back here. K's where are you? I thought you wanted to see what the Spider Cave is like, now.

K's: We will grab a later flight.

Ms. Stitches: Here goes, stats from the Main Table. Heavy metal poisoning, beryllium poisoning which is what kept them alive. All the crystals at the Invitation probably dissolved and they breathed them in or were coated in the dust. I serious doubt anyone would have paid attention to that. Since most spiders and Octopi are Silver based they lived but with dead tissue throughout their bodies. This regretfully explains the Athenians and Atlanteans deaths. Jon meet me at the Black Cave Office so I can get Krystal out of the Crystal. We have a cure for her most likely.

Supper strong steroids and Ester's fruit if any is around or in the freezers, otherwise lots of vitamin cocktails and the body should eat it like a disease and put her in cold water to control the high fevers or brain ice-packs.

B's: We missed the beryllium poisoning; it was masked with all the other metals.

Jamie: Do it all. I don't see how both methods can harm each other or the patients.

Cindy: I am back. Anything I can do?

Janella: I am going out now the Pipsqueaks are doing cover. Here is the headset. We are trying to find ourselves some more super fast missiles. 2 Octopi are going with us.

Jon: Are you disobeying doctors orders?

[Janella grabs Jon from behind and kisses him. Janella is covered in Silver head to toe.]

Janella: Ouch.

Ms. Stitches: Your shot for the beryllium.

Janella: That hurts and is really burning.

Ms. Stitches: More goodies to come. Be back here in 2 hours. Medical Orders!

Jon: Godspeed.

Ms. Stitches: Hi Genny, Ester, come on Jon, I am widowed and I want kids. When someone sees Lesa, tell her to come or not.

Jon: You know there is a World War going on?

Ms. Stitches: For you, nothing special, you will fix it, you always do. You mashed the last 2; uh our last 2.

[10 minutes later]

[Prototype.] [TOC](#)

Pipsqueaks: 2 heading your way. Targeting. Got both. Grab them. Clear to stop.

[Janella's scooter stops, and the Octopi pulls in the 2 missiles. She opens the core with a cordless screw driver and pulls out the brain, the cobalt diamond and the warhead.]

Jane (Octopi): Let's move.

[Jane puts her hand on the brain. Closes her eyes. Then opens them up again. Then repeats on the second one.]

Jane: Another Cynthia and Cindy. More resting now.

Janella: I am heading for one of their factories. Manhattan here we come. See if they have something besides the two we know of. Full speed. There it is. This thing is massive. I really didn't expect this. Seriously they are shooting a laser at me. We are immune to those you idiots.

Jon: They are targeting. Run!

Pipsqueaks: Incoming 10, no 12. They don't like guests. Head out we will try and kill them off before they figure out we are here.

Janella: Full speed.

Prototype: We are headed your way. Fly through us. You will understand once you see us. We fed in the location to your ship.

Pipsqueaks: 3 shot down.

[They look ahead and see 3 scooters but they are tied together with some kind of netting forming an extremely large triangle. Janella flies through. The missiles following her are caught in the triangle. The Prototype takes off back toward home. 2 Spiders jump out of one ship with long cords attached and land about where the missiles are located. They stand up but are sideways to look at. The spiders get to the first missile. Put out the brain and touch it. The lights go out on the capsule. They proceed to the next one. Already dead, then next one.]

Pipsqueaks: They targeted us. 6 on us. Sorry we have to go and redirect these elsewhere.

[They speed up, do a 180 and pass the missiles. The missiles turn around slowly and then back to full speed toward the Pipsqueaks. Pipsqueaks allow them to get close. Then fly right over the outer corner to the factory and speed up. The missiles hit the factory.]

Janella: I can't shake them. I will eject before they impact. Please find me.

[The spiders from the Prototype are on the seventh missile. They open it and it is still alive. They lay their hand on the brain. It dies.]

Janella: The missiles are in slow speed now. The Octopi are getting them to pull out the warheads. Thank you ladies.

[Janella turns around and heads toward the factory full speed.]

Janella: I am going to flip upside down and we will drop our payload. Strap in. Then heading back home.

[She gets to the edge of the factory and flips the scooter upside down and the missile warheads drop out and explode on contact. She also brought some black hole grenades which fell and made large areas of the roof into large holes. All head back. They drop off the ships and head back toward the Main Cave.]

[Location: Main Cave. Time: 40 minutes later.]

{Jon telepathically to Scooter Crews: The brains were whom?

Jane to Jon: Cindy, Cynthia and Noose. Noose was the one that was the second set shot at Janella most likely.}

Jon: Janella who told you to bomb them? Your out of line. You don't go off doing whatever you please. You are not twined with the boss anymore, not that that gave you the right. We are not ready to start a war on 2 fronts.

C's: Technically you are not in charge. We are.

[The C's do a deep swallow and look at him; kind of scared look on their faces. Janella storms off.]

Pipsqueaks: You know she is a little too free willed and stubborn all at the same time. You were harsh.

Jon: Okay ladies. But we can't be doing stupid stuff. Pipsqueaks they have 6 more satellites ready when you feel like going back out again.

Pipsqueaks: Okay after we bathroom and eat. We don't know a Noose; she must have come into the fold after the snapshot was taken.

[30 Minutes later.]

[2nd Message.]

{Lesa telepathically to Jon: I just got another message from Sexpot. I think I need to describe it; it seems important. There are 6 brains in jelly next to the Cyborg. 2 of them went dead and he threw them in anger onto the floor. After he left, Sexpot was able to absorb part of the brains and she mashed a couple of the blue diamonds into her feet. She walked up one of the crystals till she was able to insert it. She is in Southern California in the original earthquake area. I think I saw an image she took out of the Cyborg. 10,000 or more AI's appear to be standing in rows inside partial cubicles of some kind and multiple rows. I can't exactly explain it.

We are 10 miles from the Invitation Center we are going to ditch the car there and teleport back if the Table is not damaged.

Jon to Lesa: We have what appears to be a cure for the Octopi. They are beryllium and heavy metal poisoned too. That apparently stopped the vampire attributes you all have.

Jon to Lesa: See you soon.}

Jon: Broadcast: Pipsqueaks can you get to the Texas Invitation Center? Lesa & Liza are approaching it. End.

[A scooter flies over Jon's head going inside the cave more. Then in a minute or so flies back over his head. He notices the Pipsqueaks are on-board.]

Genny: Are you going to make up with Janella?

Jon: Yes dear. So I guess someone has been burning your ears with what happened. Leaving now.

Little Brother, what is the status of the AI's outside.

Little Brother: Since the re-image, they have stopped the advance. But if some are dead, not all of them are.

[Jon goes down to the machine shop area and approaches Janella from behind and puts his hands on her waist.]

Janella: Go away.

[She knocks his hands off. Jon puts them back on.]

Janella: Go away. I am mad at you.

Jon: I am sorry that I came down too hard.

Janella: I forgive you, maybe!

Little Brother: Jon and the C's, chatter on the radio frequencies is the AI's with battle gear out of Manhattan are slowing heading toward human settlements. They are killing any human they find; man, woman, child.

Janella: I didn't listen and this is my fault. I will fix it.

Jon: No you won't.

Janella: Yes I will; get out of my way.

Jon: Stop being stubborn you. You're one weak Octopi. You barely got out alive last time.

T's: This way, Mr. & Mrs. Stubborn.

[Jon and Janella follow the T's.]

[A New Ship.]

[Location: Machine Shop.]

T's: Walla.

[They walk into a make shift room to view a new ship.]

Jon: You took one of the rail gun ships and put 6 engines on it. Even the Pipsqueaks will pass out at those G forces.

[Rail guns are multiple machine guns arranged in Gatling gun arrangement, mounted on a special rail system to stop recoil.]

Tammi [Spiders]: It's programmed to fly back here if the pilots do hit full throttle. Misty did some mix of the ways the spiders avoided the missiles from the films for the autopilot.

Jon: The rail gun ships were great for short quick battles but they run out of ammo quick.

Armorer (Spiders): The guns shoot slower now with even a setting from the cockpit to match radar speed, a lot less wasted bullets and the little 17 caliber bullets which even at 3400 FPS are about 4 times more ammo, every third round incinerator armor piecing. The guns are on swivels. Fly real fast by the enemies shoot out the side and try a different direction or approach the next time. The films show the AI's adapt well to the same old, same old but don't have the paranoid mind of some of us and don't think well on their feet. A grenade launcher in the bottom only 5 shots so make them count.

[Over the cave monitors.]

Pipsqueaks: We arrived after Lesa & Liza arrived. They encountered a bunch of AI's who just killed a bunch of humans who had been there for a while. The AI's made a good guess on where the car was traveling to. Lesa had no trouble killing the AI's. We are coming back to pick up some spiders. B's please put 4 spiders in a deep sleep so they can make the trip back here and send extra drug in case. Liza said we need to dismantle them and get out the brains or what is left and destroy the batteries.

Liza is being stubborn and not allowing them to return here yet.

Lesa: I got another message from Sexpot. The Cyborg came back in and noticed the brains. She told him. I wanted to make sure they are dead.

Cyborg said "I see you absorb some of them." She told him "Hey a vampire has to eat sometime, I will enjoying eating your black heart. Come over close enough for me to bite you." }

Jon: Little Brother was that through our satellites.

Little Brother: Yes it was. The Prototype put another 12 into space on its way to and from Manhattan.

Tammi [Beastie Spiders]: We will have the other 2 rail gun ships ready tomorrow.

Janella: When can I take it out for a quick flight?

[She punches Jon on the arm.]

Janella: Now I forgive you since you made me a new toy.

[Jon rubs his arm.]

T's: We are testing a few of the spiders who are living now. We have 7 pilots so far. The Prototype pilots can do super speeds too. But the Prototypes are immune to missile attacks at present. The gravity well sucks everything in; spiders just can go through it.

Jon: 7?

Tammi: That is my new sub clan. One of us will pass out but the other one can still get back home. That was not the original test procedure. Both had to stay awake. My clan are not severely twined. We were the last born Beasties and no one ever tested us for speed that we remember. More are being tested.

[Beasties are women but have so much hair all over them that they appear to look more like bears with white haired human faces, forearms, front neck and upper chest with brown or black haired bodies.]

Jon: Is it ready for a maiden voyage? Got a big enough gravity well to suck in Manhattan?

C's: We are working on it.

T's: We don't have enough ruby diamonds to pull it off. This ship is ready and armed.

Jon: T's walk with me if you can.

[Jon & the T's walk over to a golf-cart and drive back to the Main Cave, C's come along.]

Jon: Did you ever notice the US Flag with the red, white and blue stripes on the partition or blast doors?

T's: Yes.

Jon: Did you ever ask yourselves why 4 spiders can move doors that weight tons?

T's: Why would we? Spiders do great work; the rollers are well tuned and door very well balanced. We also have the best lubricants on this planet too.

Jon: That door directly in front of us the one that is 20' wide, 80' high and at 1' thick weights about 400lbs. Those same 4 spiders could carry it.

T's: Ruby diamonds, Crystals, and cobalt diamonds. Red, white and blue. Clear diamonds mixed throughout. We are too smart for our own good.

Jon: The door next to the steps has been gutted of Cobalt diamonds so don't try to move it. If you need them use them. C's & B's know already the K's put the doors together years ago and a few unknowing Octopi hung them.

T's: Time to make a larger Pooper Scooper.

{Jon telepathically to Everyone: With the C's approval, would you take out the Prototype Pooper Scooper and Janella, test the new ship but make it very obvious we are only killing 1/3 to 1/2 of the AI's who are close to the Main Cave and Bio-city. Let's see if Manhattan advancement stops.

Janella to Everyone: PLEASE C's. PLEASE GENNY.

C's to Everyone: Okay. Get ready ladies. Stay outside the Cave when finished and see what happens in Manhattan.}

C's [looking at Jon, speaking aloud]: Have you come up with another idea after that?

Jon: Already have one, if they can fly get them outside where their radar can not miss seeing them while Janella plays around. Put a few of the re-imaged Octopi at the front door to catch any missiles should any come our way.

{C's to Everyone: That is a GO ladies.

T's to Everyone: Let's get the other rails ships in the air, they still look mean.

Pipsqueaks are coming back high attitude to look for flanking by the AI's.

Jon: Thanks everyone.

The K's: How stupid. The normal current missiles cannot do no gravity space. They contain no oxygen tanks. Put gravity engines in some of the scooters if we need to have close-by tactical radar. It might be a good way to escape, at least test one.}

C's: Jon, you and the K's are in charge of tactical. We were just angry. We still have us to fix.

Jon: Glad to see you had it in you; I don't call that human emotion, that's leadership!

C's: Thanks.

[The C's turn around and are 'ear to ear' smiles.

[15 minutes later.]

[Over monitors.]

Janella: We are leaving now; everyone get ready to fly out if we don't have to run away from the attack. Little Brother can you light us the sky for everyone to see everything. It might be a good moral booster for the men at Bio-City, that have been really working hard and New Girl is a slave driver at best.

Little Brother: How is that for you?

Janella: I don't know how you did that but I love the flag.

{Jon telepathically to the Nobodies: Can you let the cave dwellers see that?}

[The top of the cave all of the sudden shows the night skies outside and the flag.]

Jon: Little Brother record everything you can, for later playback if Janella can do a good job.

Janella: You will pay for that comment. Bye.

[The Pooper Scooper flies to just right before the AI advancement. Janella is right behind the screen and the AI's launch 2 missiles. Spiders grab the missiles stuck in the gravity well pop off the warheads and throw them back. One hits in the dirt but the other one lands in the middle of some AI's. Janella drops and flies low through the debris and cuts two paths with the side guns and hit 2 out of 3 of the grenades on military vehicles and they turn to a Black Hole Marbles. The miss ends up sucking in about a dozen AI's. They try firing artillery shells but don't even come close. Janella makes a hard 270 degree turn and the Pooper Scooper is now at a 90 degree angle over the top of advancement camp. The ship again cuts 2 paths as the guns and lasers fire out the side. Janella gets to the edge of the camp and stops cold flips open the cockpit and flings the 2 last Grenades out both hitting military vehicles but Janella and the 3 ships are long gone before they hit.]

Janella: Home.

[The pooper scooper flips off power and everything drops; ships break off at full speed. Two objects fall at odd angles and detonate once they hit the ground.]

Jon: NO!

C's: They may have already expired; today was it for them regardless. Everyone out to show the AI's we have lots more.

Jon: Aim them toward Manhattan. Little brother make a tribute to the 2 spiders. Genny please word it to make sure it doesn't look like suicide, you're good at that. Put "The Beginning" for the end of our film.

Genny: "Spider's know exactly when they are going to die. So the Jane's decided before the mission to go out with a bang. Godspeed ladies, Jane's to heaven, we will miss you always. Amen.

The Beginning."

[Over the monitors.]

Misty: Great job everyone. Dad and C's come to my computer lab. Please.

[Location: Misty's Computer Lab.]

[Once the 3 of them get there.]

Jon: I think that is a flight simulator correct?

Misty: Yes, the problem has been with battle drones it is hard for a human to pay attention to all around you. The instruments are a sorry substitute for quick thinking and sight. Meet the last 2 spiders born. They are Cindy's & Cynthia's kids. They had twin sisters too who were named Noose. Noose was so badly twin-ed they couldn't do anything independently. Cindy & Cynthia were not in the Invitation but here in the Main Cave babysitting all the kids. Cassy's are actual full ability spiders with semi independent brains. I figured out the visual problem and attached cameras to the Pipsqueaks' ship to see if I could get a 360 degree view. The hydraulics in the AI's have been adapted to three of the twin engines and our Cassy's have already taken them out for multiple spins at full speed.

Jon: Them out? You little ladies can control 3 at once?

Cassy's: We think with some more flying we can get Misty to program some self taught features to allow us about 12 at once. There are probably others who can do this too. We just seem to be naturals for the job.

Little Brother: Everyone is back including Lesa & Liza. Liza is being treated.

Cindy: AI's at Manhattan have turned around.

[Everyone is cheering.]

Little Brother: Film shoots are ready for editing.

Jon: Please info them of where we are.

Little Brother: Already done. They are eating on the way to you.

Liza: I want to do this film so I can see it all while being a pin cushion. I was not born yet, but Dad, I think I will understand some of what you when through with Ms. Stitches, the slave driver.

[The monitor in Misty's lab turns on.]

Foggy (Octopi): Cara and I have the drawings you wanted. I am going to sleep now. I have been up 4 days; see you in a couple days. The spiders will deliver the hologram generators with the plans inside. They are also on your computer. Goodnight all.

Everyone: Goodnight and thanks.

Misty: She thinks the K's or you C's can redo one of the radiation domes for a large scale air force

simulator. The Athenians might just interface well. The T's said we should be able to make 500 3 engine scooters with long lasting lasers and 50 cal's from all the parts and the single engine scooters.

Jon: Broadcast: T's call me on my phone.

[Cindy walks in carrying an AR 15 looking weapon. Jon's phone rings.]

Jon: Hello T's. Misty's girls can use 12 - 4 engine or readapts some old ones? How quick can you have the other rail gun ships ready and some Pooper Scoopers?

T's: Are we going to attack Manhattan, before they can clone more brains?

Jon: Yes or at least slow them down and give the humans even more time to relocate. I bet they are grouped. They don't know how to gorilla warfare; we need to drop them some of our new guns.

T's: You can have 5 rail gun ships in 14 hours and 5 Pooper Scoopers. We hate to say this but we could use normal spider pilots for the Pooper Scoopers. If they truly get in trouble they can punch it and just pass out but the speed they fly is not real important. Others will be starting away ahead of time.

Jon: I have a crazy idea. Broadcast: I need some spiders who were pilots who came from the snapshot. Please if you haven't already looked at the wall of names and figured how many of you have less than a year to go. I need you to do what might be a suicide mission. I need you to fly the 5 Pooper Scoopers (sorry the Prototype's new name) to attempt to defend Manhattan's area humans. We need 30-50 to 'woman' all the ships and be able to disarm the missile's brains. Put your name up on the monitors and see the T's in the machine shop area. As soon as it is possible start the Pooper Scoopers moving in an ever expanding circle around us. If we can get some of the scooters in the air to bait any AI's to send missiles up and then keep flying back and forth through the Pooper Scoopers. Let's see how this goes. Rail gun ships and rail gun pilots be ready in case you have to protect the scooters to get them back here safely. End Broadcast.

Lesa: I couldn't say openly. The AI's are mining crystals out from under San Francisco. Apparently there was a cave there once that probably was buried during the 1909 earthquake. Sexpot is fairly certain this is the world wide headquarters. They are also getting crystal pieces out of the salt water in the oceans and lakes that is why Manhattan, Houston, Southern California and Detroit. Who would have thought, we should have done that and used the beryllium for ships.

[Flashback from Jon's Trip.] [TOC](#)

[The Pipsqueaks are running a golf-cart pulling along a trailer with 6 fusion reactors on it. The C's & K's are sitting on the trailer.]

Jon: Private conversation ladies.

[They all get off the golf-cart and trailer. Curve their hands and touch the bottoms of their hands together in a chain. Janella walks up, separates the C's hands and links herself in between.]

Jon: And who invited you?

Janella: Me. Don't trust me anymore since we were twinned for decades?

Jon: Okay you talked me into it. I did some traveling the Ether last night, here is what Detroit looks like now. Notice they built right above the mouth of the cave there? Now onward to southern California. This is the headquarters it looks like.

K's: Don't tell Foggy; the AI's built a city larger than any of our Bio Cities, she will be ticked off. This building is 60 miles across. It is hard to believe they connected that much of the previous cities together.

Jon: I couldn't get too close but I did see they stole many of our fusion reactors. Then I realized they are making them. So now the question for you geniuses is how do you make that cart of fusion

reactors bombs?

I want to fulfil Lex Luther's wish of dumping southern California into the ocean.

I also attempted to get upward to the Death Star. I think it is still intact. If you can't use it, I want it to become the Lex Luther bomb.

I don't know if the Table under Detroit will work as we get stronger or not. Katie made one hick of a warhead once with raw ingredients and a Black Hole Grenade.

[All of sudden Jon's and Janella's vision is clouded with formulas and they disconnect.]

K's: You know this is going to make the nukes that humans made look like firecrackers?

Jon: Keep this to yourselves and make southern California into lots of little black hole marbles or large ones, I really don't care as long the AI's are mashed inside.

K's: Yes boss, we think we can do this but will need a few days.

Jon: Have fun making your new toys.

[The K's & C's touch their heads together and purr.]

[Day 7. Main Cave next to Main Table area.]

{Jon telepathically to the B's, Ester & Jamie: What about the amphetamine Cara uses good or bad effect for the Octopi's treatment?}

Katie: Hi dad.

Jon [Back turned]: I hear a bratty kid.

Katie: No you hear The Bratty Kid and my accomplices.

Jon: Hi Mia, Krystal [stern] and 4 greenish brats.

Mia: If you don't stop trying to escape, I will not rip out your hair but your head.

[One of Ester's kids is elevated 2 feet in the air. The greenish kids takes on a very passive behavior.]

Katie: Hug your dad and then you all go that way to all the other plants or I cook you for dinner.

Mia: Genny said Bedroom NOW. But we wanted to let you know we just materialized, in case you have any jobs for us before we go to bed? Apparently the Krystal in the Crystal died and once they got her out, here we are. I will have to figure that one out later after we win.

{Jon telepathically to Ester: Found 4 kids, sending your way.

Ester to Jon: Sorry I didn't notice I was missing some.

Jon to Ester: Some?

Ester to Jon: Yes all your tadpoles were busy stimulating my eggs. I think 16 so far. Some Spiders that I don't remember dumped a dump truck load of Bio-vitamin and I just could not help myself, plus my daily allowance from the plumbing in the Hydroponics Bay from the Earthen Globes. The Athenians are really doing a great job getting everything pruned and replanted. The Athenians are also training a bunch of men and women, so they can clean up the one in town. I am shipping kids that way too.

Jon to Ester: Tadpoles as in fertile.

Ester to Jon: Yes. Oh, you didn't know, oh because we found out right after the Snapshot. Mrs. is working on it. Don't tell Janella but she is 2 double twins pregnant. Let her discover for herself.

Jon to Ester: I thought Ms. Stitches was just kidding.

Ester: Now that you know, I need a refill. }

Mia: The 3 of us are going to start moving all the people back and forth in small quantities through

the night.

[Location: Entrance Cave. Time: 7 AM]

[Cindy limping just slightly.]

The K's: What is wrong?

Cindy: I broke my toe on what I thought was a rock. Black shiny round one that would not move.

The K's: Which direction?

Cindy: That way a ½ mile.

The K's: Did you see lots more?

Cindy: No but something that I could not understand but didn't investigate, an almost perfect cone shaped hill. I high tailed it and that is when I broke my toe.

{The K's telepathically to Leslie Ann: Are you alive?

Leslie Ann to K's: What do you nuts want, I am busy examining humans?

The K's to Leslie Ann: We have a trash dump mountain at the entrance to the Earthen Globe at the Sewage Plant. We would love to make lots of little copper clad steel bullets, the AI's love them so much, and we would love for THOSE METAL MONSTERS to have plenty of them.

Like Jon always said, 'America can never be strong as long as we allow illegals to stay in the country. They attempt to kill us, change us and infect us with their beliefs. Those who committed crimes should be given the death penalty, same punishment their native country would have given to us. While these are being exported back to where they came from, those who are coming across the borders now should be shot.'

[Sternly.] The AI's came from the ground, we are going to put them back in the ground.

Leslie Ann: Erin and I are leaving. Sometimes I actually like you nuts. I will round up a few people in case we run into visitors. }

{Genny telepathically to Jon & Janella: Main Table now both of you! }

Janella: Hi Genny. Hi Jon.

Genny: You two need to make up now. So punch it out or sex it out, whatever works. Janella, the C's want you to fly them to the Death Star in a couple of hours. They are starting to get what is going with the 3 of you in the 5 engine. Bye you two have fun however you figure it out. Hi Ms. Stitches, do you feel better today?

Ms. Stitches: I always knew I would bury my 3rd husband but World War III. I wonder if we died together or not. The list just says I died. Anyway, since Jon has the absolute best genes on earth, I am thinking about a kid. The world might need another Octopi right now. If I have twins like many have with Jon, I get the full meal package deal.

Genny: When it is your time, let me know. Any luck with Tables?

Ms. Stitches: Not much we have 252 listed and most are non-connections. So either bombed or just all the trash everywhere, no one knows. I keep trying, Katie & Mia are going to start bouncing on active ones and kill power plants off. The Crews have been exchanged with the Spider Cave. Krystal has found settlements in 7 of the Bio Cities, so we will be attempting to get them supplies or move them here soon.

Genny: Invitation. I wonder if it could work once we are strong again.

Ms. Stitches: I still have my stone knives as Jon calls them. Too bad they can't work on him this last year of his 2nd life. I am so sorry you have to bury him twice.

Genny: Not me, I always love the time with him. We talk a lot during the day. He always seems to

find time to talk to me even during WW3. I think I will go to the Bedroom and nap some. Has the Sky fallen yet?

Ms. Stitches: Not yet today, but we all seem to be always working on it.

{C's & K's telepathically to Everyone: We are trying to get a few areas of necessities done, the Earthen Globes are going to produce whatever elements and compounds needed which can be found in the small mountains of trash Black Hole Marbles just outside.

We are trying to fix the Hydroponics in Bio-City so men have a place to go for food and arm them with ways to kill loose AI's that are outside spying on us.

We are testing pilots and making ships to start with Manhattan and work our way to the main complex in California.

Lots of reactors are being made, and black hole grenades.

Drugs and Bio-food is being made to help our sick races. We bought some time last night by attacking the 10,000 AI's not far from us.

We want to make Bio-City a refuge for human males.

Women will come here through the Entrance Cave or through the Wet Cave from Bio-City. We are very secure from Aerial attacks right now so people can later go outside to the yard.

Cindy is in charge of everything Bio-City, if you have ideas.

We have a new procedure for every spider. You will have to be in or wearing Black 1 day a week till further notice. Exchange jobs if need be.

Help the weak, they have been through a lot and just lucky to be alive.

Pray often, thank God often for your life and health; we are his humble servants. Bye all. }

[Location: Entrance Cave. Time 9:30 AM.]

[Janella and the C's get in the 5 engine to head to the Death Star. Other ships are outside to make sure no ambush or anything.

Some of the healthy Octopi are checking out the wooded areas for stray AI's.

The F1-12's (we added 2 extra wing engines) are Ground Pounding old vehicles on the road and highway close by and then dumping off the Black Hole Marbles when the ships become too heavy to make a 'quick escape'.

[Death Star.] [TOC](#)

[Location: Death Star. Time 10:35 AM.]

[Janella and the C's pack the 5 engine ship with Spider Tubes. They take the ship out to the mouth of the cave and head straight up to the Death Star.

The Death Star is a spherical shaped space station with a massive Solar Energy Panel in tow with it. The Solar Panel Section was to convert solar radiation into laser beams to shoot at receivers on the Earth. It was there as an alternate energy for Earth that was green power. They dock and open the doors to the corridor that goes to the central core.]

C's: Little Daughter are you awake?

L. Daughter: I am now. Are you AI's or C's?

C's: Please scan us and Janella too. What would you like us to answer for verification?

L. Daughter: Were you with the K's when they died? Were you with all the others who were with them when they died?

C's: Trick question huh? The Pipsqueaks were there. We saw the Pipsqueaks die 1 year later and all

of that is sealed in the Humble Files because the videos are so very disturbing to us Spiders.

L. Daughter: What would you like me to do?

C's: What happened to the crew?

L. Daughter: They are hibernating in the secondary main reactor crystals but Jan the Octopi is probably dead; I am guessing.

Janella: Wow, we expected everyone to be dead. Let's go ladies.

[They go into the main chamber. Two gigantic fusion reactors are there, surrounded by 12 foot tall crystals.]

C's: Here is the maintenance crew in these 2 crystals. Can you get them out?

Janella: I will try. I have never done this but I watched how Lisa & Liza put the K's, Pipsqueaks and Jon into crystals after they died.

[Janella's eyes turn silver and she touches the outside of the crystal that has one of the spiders in it and then she slowly puts her hands and then her arms inside the crystal. She pulls out one of the spiders. Janet looks around, puzzled look and then watches Janella pull out her twin also named Janet. Once both Janet's are out they touch foreheads together and turn around and see one of the large crystal with pieces on the floor.]

Janet's: The compartment below us is under a vacuum. That is what made the floor mushy and caused Jan's death. We will have to rethink bracing below the floor next to the power crystals. Sorry Jan, enjoy singing in heaven. You have a beautiful voice.

[Then they look at Janella and then turn and look at the C's with a frown on their faces. C's take out a spider tube and hand one each to the Janet's.]

C's: Sorry it is not very tasty but it will keep us alive. And yes we are out of shape, we let human emotions infect us. The K's fixed us. Oh, sorry, we shouldn't have said that yet. Oh well, the K's did a molecular snapshot of them and Jon and Big Brother activated it so they are back.

Janet's: Little Daughter should we put them out into space?

L. Daughter: They passed the test, they are the C's. Not AI's or clones.

Janella: I am going to need help getting everyone else out. It is hard for me to pick them up by myself with my arms inside.

Janet's: Get out the commander first; they are moody.

C's: That's being kind.

[Janet's laughing.]

Janet's: Welcome aboard C's and Janella. Did we win the AI war?

Janella: No, we are still losing but the K's and Jon have at least turned some things around. At least we have ways to fight back now. The Octopi and Spiders are sick and we now have a way to cure them from all the radiation effects. That is why we are pinkish. All the spiders need to soak in Black. Do you have some on-board?

Janet's: Little Daughter please show us a diag of the station and don't tell the Commanders we already looked at it on the monitors. Also check and see if we have the 2 barrels of Black still.

[The monitors shows the station in 3D with various red X's on certain spots.]

L. Daughter: 2 barrels still unopened, the best I can tell. There are 3 AI's who are in next to the bottom of the core and appear to be dead but no way to tell. Also an oddity, there is a satellite above us hidden from Earth's view.

[Janet's put their hands on 2 scanners on the wall and the wall moves to show lots of weapons.]

Janella: Toys, nice! Well the two of you soak first. The left over we will have to swap around.

[They walk about 180 degrees and proceed to get the Commanders out [2 spiders].]

Commanders: C's, you look like crap. I presume you are here to take over command. The war is still on and we are still losing.

C's: No, we are here to help get the station back up to full speed but we have to do it very covertly, so as to not arouse the AI's until Dooms Day. The day that Jon put down that we take back America from the AI's. We are nuking Detroit, Southern California and Manhattan all at the same time. The Octopi and spiders are going to take out Houston.

Commanders: There is not enough bombs to take out California it is covered with our fusion reactors; it's immune to nuclear warheads.

C's: The Death Star is the bomb for California. The idiots stole our fusion reactors we are making them pay. The K's, Pipsqueaks and us came up with a way to turn them all into Black Hole Bombs. Sorry this is a lot to take in. The K's and a lot of those who died have been brought back through the Molecular Snapshot Image.

Commanders: We know about the snapshot but are kind of shocked it worked and didn't turn the universe inside out. How many of those spider tubes did you bring?

C's: We have a 100 days supply here roughly.

Commanders: Janet's how much damage in the past 8 years? We are sure you looked first.

Janet's: We have 3 hitchhikers to drop out first. 8 compartments are on a vacuum. One of them cracked the crystal that Jan was in and she is dead. The solar panel arrays have the expected holes in them. So it looks like Janella is what we have to work with.

[They have big smiles.]

Commanders: Would you please take 3 black hole grenades downstairs and drop out our visitors?

Janet's: On it. We also have a hitchhiker satellite straight above us.

[As they pick out 4 grenades out of the back of their jump suits and show the Commanders.]

Commanders: We will help Janella wake everyone else up.

[Janella and the Commanders proceed to pull all the rest of the crew out of the crystals. Janet's take 2 50 Caliber auto weapons out of one of the weapons closest on the way down to where the AI's are located. On their way they open the 2 barrels of Black and stick one arm in and the Black covers them completely.]

C's: We are going to upgrade some of the software and defense systems. We will be in the main core. The laser beam guns have to be used in long bursts. We have to overheat or melt the missiles, short bursts are reflected off or absorbed. We also need to see if we can revert back or add some 50 caliber guns into the mix if any are up here.

{Janet's, telepathically to Everyone: This is not good, they woke up. But they are not aiming at us. I don't think they can see us coated in Black. This is going to be fun. We will need a long screw driver or rod to pop off the breast plates and pull out the brains.}

[They make it back into the hallway and grab a couple of long rods out of the wall tool chest. Then they go make their way through the maze of beams to the AI which is out of view of the others. One of them puts the rod in the upper body hole and the breast plate opens. The other Janet rips out the brain. They go back and get some epoxy and make 2 baseball sized balls of it. They get the rifles and shoot a hole through the brains in each AI which makes a hole in the outer hull of the ship and air starts whistling out. They throw the balls at the holes and the vacuum sucks the balls into the holes. They return upstairs.]

[Janella and 4 of the newly revived spiders are helping grab out 2 more of the crew and they start fighting with the 4 spiders. Janella moves to position and punches both of them in the back of the neck, knocking them out cold.]

Janella: They are in shock. Put them in the Black and get some air going into the Black so they can be submerged. Have they been sicker than most of you?

Spiders: Yes; we figured they were going to die soon, even though they are almost the youngest.

Janella: Sorry I need to get at an Earth facing window so I can talk to Jon. He thinks we should be able to telepathically talk to each other since we were twinned for so long and let him know about Jan and that we can be functional.

[A couple spiders take Janella to one of the larger windows.]

{Janella telepathically to Jon: Are you there?}

Jon to Janella: I am here.

Janella to Jon: So once again you are in my head. Anyway, everyone but Jan is alive, 2 spiders were in shock and currently in Black. But we are low on Black only 2 barrels for 14 spiders.

Jon to Janella: Wait. }

[Back in the Main Cave.]

Little Brother: It appears the AI's are loading some large rockets onto a launch pad. Estimate is they are headed toward the Death Star.

{Jon to Janella: I think you all have been discovered. Leave orbit above us and wipe out all the other satellites around this planet as you can. This is really getting on my wires. Better figure out quick how to arm yourselves against the rockets. I doubt the Pipsqueaks and the couple others can shoot all or even most of the rockets down. The new scooters don't have gravity engines, like the Pipsqueaks ship has. I will get them up there as soon as possible and other assist ships.

Janella to Jon: Okay. Take care I will talk with you as soon as I can. Oh I am pregnant, don't know to be happy or sad.

Jon to Janella: Be happy just pray she takes after her father mostly. Bye. }

[Janella, big frown and then runs upstairs.]

Janella: We have been discovered. Rockets are probably headed our way as soon as the AI's get them ready on the launch pads. C's work fast.

Commander: Someone go and remove that spy satellite above us anyway you wish.

Janella: We need to move out of normal orbit.

Commanders: You heard her. Power up whatever is not broken and lets take a trip somewhere toward the other side of the Earth, those rockets probably have a limit.

Janella: Shoot down any satellites not our own if you can on the way. If someone will show me the manual laser controls I will try and get whatever I can after we leave visual sight of the Main Cave. We need the rockets not to know where we are going, hopefully they run out of gas searching for us. Information: all satellites that the Main Cave could reach and all the ones that rotated overhead are gone that belonged to the AI's. We are slowly putting up more of our own satellites, but still lots of gaps and poor coverage.

[Time: 2 PM. Moving the Death Star out of stationary orbit.]

Janet's [over speakers]: You only have one main reactor, but make sure you check out the crystals for sound quality to make sure they are not damaged before powering up the main fusion reactor. Remind us later if we live to make a 3rd main reactor, we should have the parts.

Commanders: We will be heading south across the US and then part of Mexico then toward the South Pole. I would guess not a lot of satellites are viewing the oceans and low population areas. [Spiders start climbing all over the crystals and are hitting them with various tools they had grabbed out of the tool closets. Each one strikes a part of the crystal and a tone is given off. Then the next spider, over and over from top to bottom. It almost sounds like a instrumental song.]

Spiders: All good.

[The Commanders press the 2 large red and blue buttons. A humming starts and the core starts glowing and the crystals start glowing.]

Pilots [over the speakers]: We are leaving orbit now. It is going to be rocky, we can't disconnect all the miles of solar panels.

Janella [over the speakers]: Give me a minute I think I can cut most of them from here with the manual laser gun controls.

[About a min. later.]

Janella: I did all I can see. Go.

Pilots: We are moving. Let me know if we have any major ruptures. We had to bypass about everything to get her to start from cold.

Commanders: Separate into compartments and seal yourselves in.

Janet's [over the speakers]: Get out of there Janella. That is the first place that will crush, if this goes badly.

[The O's are on top of the Death Star in space and take 2 ball bats and from opposite directions smash the satellite.]

The O's: We are attached outside in case of ruptures and our AI watcher is debris and falling to Earth.

[Janella jumps up out of the small compartment and closes the portal. Then goes up a couple of steps more and closes the next portal. Sits down and injects herself with a vial of Silver.]

Pilots [over the speakers]: We are stuck. We can't break loose from the southern hallway out to the solar panels.

Janet's [over the speakers]: Little Daughter, open the portals as we are running towards them till we get to the last one. We will attempt to blow the hallway section. Would someone go outside and get us if the cords break and turn up the outside gravity so we will come along on our trip?

C's [over the speakers]: We have control of the robot arms down here. Head toward them if you can. We should be able to see you. We are making best guess on which way you will head and arms are there to catch you.

The O's: We are outside Janet's; we can grab you.

[The Commander have an angry like frown on their faces. Jealousy.]

[The C's have the monitors showing all the areas of the Death Star.]

C's: No more Commander!

[The spiders all kind of straight up their backs, like they know they are being watched and get a kind of startled smile on their faces, scratch their ears, look around with their eyes and go back to work.]

[Janet's take out the Black Hole Grenades and put in new codes on the touch pad. The Janet's get into two suits and proceed to open the first outer hatch. They grab the 4 grenades and press the buttons for the outer hatch. They are in a long hallway. They attach 3 grenades and one Janet throws the last grenade up it hits the ceiling and the hallway disintegrates all around them and they grab both hands on the cords as the air forces slam them against the outer hatch door. It opens and the Commanders are in suits and grab the Janet's. Then the outer door closes. Inner door opens. They walk into the

room and get out of the suits.]

Janet's: Go for it Pilots, we are free.

Pilots: Thanks. Moving now, thanks everyone. Unless we say otherwise Janella you can get back in the laser gun control room in 10 minutes.

Commanders: Did you hear the C's?

Janet's: Uh, we have been in the suits or portals, what did they say?

Commanders: Never mind. It's not important.

[The Janet's look at each other and smile, then back to a normal expression when they face the Commanders who are walking away.]

Commanders: Keep eyes on things while we are trying to get to the South Pole.

[Janet's take off to a maintenance room that has the whole ship on monitors. And opens a channel to the C's.]

Janet's: We lied. We did hear what you said to the Commanders. Thanks C's. Sorry, but we didn't know you had it in you.

C's: You're welcome. The K's are rubbing off on us. We also got infected with humanism too. Her jealousy of the Little T's is going to be cured or we will have Liza replace her. We put them in as Commanders because of some other personality traits.

Janet's: Please don't call us Little T's in public. We are not our parents and shouldn't be judged by their standards.

C's: You are far better builders than they ever were.

Janet's: That really is not a complement. They had too much breast meat in the way to be good builders. Actually our moms were the only large breasted spiders.

C's: But you are both great planners like they were. We will not call you Little T's anymore. Which by the way they are alive right now. They were in the Molecular Snapshot Image.

Janet's: Yes our moms were great planners. I hope we get to see them. How much time do they have?

C's: About 3 months. They died a few months before Jon. Jon, Janella & us carried them to and through the disintegration field after they were dead. Sorry we didn't need to bring up old memories.

Janet's: We always had great memories of our moms. Not a problem. Wouldn't we be better to fly over the North Pole?

C's: But we would fly real close to Detroit. Better idea let's give them something to shoot at other than us. Correct us if we are wrong. Were all the solar panels attached to lasers that would shoot a solid blast down to receivers on the Earth for 'free solar powered electricity'. One more 'green energy' never done in the earlier 21st century because it might kill some birds like the socialists windmills didn't.

Janet's: That was a joke the birds can see the laser beams better than humans. Yes if all are working, 1002 of them over a 5 square mile platform of solar cells. We have a new crystal loaded to take upstairs so we will have the other reactor soon.

C's: How long to redirect all the 1002 lasers in a different direction? I am thinking they could be our shield and a great problem for the rockets. We will be running right over the top of California soon now that we are out of orbit. We should be able to make their life somewhat miserable.

Janet's: Not good timing but leave the solar platform go on its normal way. If the AI's ignore it as they should. It will later be easy to course change right over Manhattan. But we should go toward Pennsylvania then the Atlantic, we have a great angle to wipe out any satellites over the top of Europe, go a little higher and grab the North Pole. The rockets from Calif. have to fly out of their way or over the Main Cave. Some of the lasers are movable with servo motors some will have to

be re-gear'd to move the way you are thinking. If no major problems, 4-6 hours we can meet it in the Atlantic on its way back to Manhattan.

C's: Janella chime in on channel 2.

Janella: I am busy putting a 50 cal inside the 5 engine. What do you need?

C's: Janet's are getting a new crystal. How long Janella before flight?

Janella: 15 min. hopefully.

Janet's: The M's can put this in place, we just have to brace the floor underneath and seal the meteor hole. Broadcast: new power crystal on central west elevator. End. We are going underneath to brace the ceiling and seal the vacuum leak.

C's: How much does that beam you're carrying weigh?

Janet's: 377 pounds. It is the thickest we have. We may be cutting it into pieces for braces under all of the floors under the Power Crystals.

C's: Have you always been able to carry that much weight? Or is the black working?

Janet's: We were never sick. We were on the dark side of the moon when the AI's wiped out most of humanity. We have never been back to Earth since the war started.

C's: Give your Black to someone else.

Janet's: Okay. Broadcast: a fact we discovered downstairs the AI's can't see spiders coated in Black. They know something is wrong but can't sense us. We need a couple of spiders down next to the compartment that is under the 13th crystal. On second thoughts meet us at the 2 barrels, we want to check on the Misfits; we really could use their welding abilities.

[They put down the beam and proceed to the barrels and reach in and pull up the Misfits.]

Janet's: Don't try to talk; Black is in your lungs. Are you two better?

[They nod yes.]

Janet's: Okay spit it all out.

[They bend their upper bodies over the barrel rims and pale yellowish gray goo starts coming out of their mouths and nose and hits the floor.]

The Misfits: We haven't felt this rested in 2 years. We don't feel sick at our stomachs like we have for the past year. What time is it?

Janet's: War plus 10 years. We have hibernated 9 years. A lot has happened. We will slowly bring you up to present. Rockets are on their way to destroy us. We need you to help weld a brace on the ceiling / floor under the 13th Crystal. Here take our Black.

[All four touch hands and the Black goes from the Janet's to the Misfits.]

[Aux (auxiliary pilots) show up.]

C's [over the speakers]: All conversations are open over all speakers. If you need a private conversation, do the mute signal to Little Daughter. Commanders, we are hoping for better cover from the ground, fly toward lower Pennsylvania. The rockets will have to make a lot of 'out of the way corrections' or fly right over the Main Cave's laser batteries. Zig Zag as you fly if possible. They may have to use their eyes to see us. Radar up here is pretty crappy.

Janet's: Pilots when do you need Aux?

Pilots: We should be good for a few more hours.

Janet's: Aux get in the barrels. Someone pull them out 30 minutes before the Pilots need them so they can eat lots. Let's go Misfits. Everyone, we will have to use the Black in small doses till the Black is all used up.

[As they walk down the hallway, Mu-Tis (teenager form) meets them holding a rather large piece

of inner hull plate which about covers her up.]

Janet's: Janella you brought a hitchhiker fairy with you from the Main Cave. Did you come up here with the C's & Janella?

[Mu-Tis bounces up and down her head. (A 'yes'.)]

Misfits: Why are you holding that plate?

[Mu-Tis turns around and starts to fly a little ahead of them. All of the sudden a hole appears on the outer wall and the air starts sucking out. The steel plate flies out of the Mu-Tis' hands and seals the hole.]

Janet's & Misfits: Thanks you just saved our lives. I guess we see what needs welded first.

[Mu-Tis smiles at them, turns to fairly form and flies through the compartment door. The Misfits and Janet's open a closet door look in lower compartment and grab out the AR welder and the small fusion reactor. One Misfit straps on the reactor and both take out a welder which looks like an AR 15 with a very large Green Dot scope but with a silver rubbery looking tube going over to the fusion reactor where the magazine would be normally. They walk back to where the hole was and in a matter of seconds the plate is welded in place.]

[When they get back to the original decompressed compartment Mu-Tis is there, holding another large plate. Tapping it against the closed door.]

Janet's: There is no air in there; you can't fly.

Mu-Tis: Yes I can.

Janet's: Did anyone hear her besides us?

Speakers: No.

[They open the first door. Mu Tis flies inside.]

Misfits: You ready?

[Mu-Tis bounces her head 'yes'.]

The O's: We have the outer hull patches in both places.

[Mu-Tis flies around all the cables to the place where the wall has a hole and pushes the plate up against the wall over the hole. Turns her head around and smiles at them.]

Misfits: Hold still we will hit a spot to hold it there. Let go. It will get hot fast.

[They hit a spot with the laser welder and Mu-Tis turns around and lays on the hot steel plate like it is a heating pad, smiles, then flies back to them. Gets a hug from the Janet's and flies through the wall.]

Misfits: She knew there was air in here after the outside hull was fixed. How?

Janet's: Just go with it. We haven't a clue. No one does. We are going to hold up the beam. If you would spot weld just enough to keep it up. We need to check and see if we have to jack up or down the floor to be level again.

[Janet's push the beam against the ceiling and the Misfits weld places on it.]

Misfits: Would someone pour some water on the floor next to the 13th crystal to make sure it is level?

Commanders: Hold on.

[Commanders walk over and pour out their glasses onto the floor.]

Commanders: One small low spot 14" in diameter. We will pound in the center.

Janet's: Got it. Thanks.

[Janet's are pushing up a piece of the ceiling and the Misfits put in a couple of tools in the gap out of their tool pouches.]

Commanders: That is good, ladies.

[Janet's go over to a cabinet and pull out long welding rods and clamps to hold the rods. They put

the rods against the ceiling and the Misfits heat up the area with the laser and Janet's feed in the rods.]

Misfits: Grab out the tools and we can finish up here.

[Mu-Tis flies in grabs the hot tools and flies around the room till they are cool.]

Janella [telepathically to the Commanders]: I am fairly certain I saw a rocket launch. I hope the K's came up with a plan.

C's: We need to find out where it is going without using our radar, keep your eyes open.

Janella: They can't see what they're aiming at; their radar must be jammed.

Commanders: It may turn back; keep an eye on it.

{Janella: Someone else is in my head. Hi ladies. Where are you?

Cathy's to Janella: Above you.

Janella to Cathy's: How did you get there without me knowing it?

Cathy's to Janella: This is our home. We were born in space. We are Janet's' kids. Ground radar is poor because too much metal is in the atmosphere. You might not know it but the Death Star has minimum metal in it; basically just the inside outer skin and some braces. The rest is Greencrete. The outside is mostly diamond fiber and the beams are beryllium alloys not iron. Now that we are not connected to the solar platform, we are almost invisible.

Also the K's tweaked the radars jammers in our satellites. K's think they give the Death Star about 5 days of non-detection in the Northern Hemisphere.

We are going inside now to give the C's the new specifications for our radars jammers here. We also brought some satellites so we can jam the radars when you cross the hemispheres. Might as well follow us back. Come on everyone.}

[Janella looks around and sees 20 ships; ships start landing in the lower area of the Death Star.]

[Inside the Death Star.]

Cathy's: We have new specs for the C's. Where are they at? By the way, we brought real food. Remember the K's figure about 5 days of non-detection, tops.

Commanders: That will be nice. Speakers are on everywhere. Janet's your kids are here.

Janet's: They where the blue X is on the monitors. We are getting the crack fixed here. The O's already fixed the outside. Then we will be up. That is the last structural problem to fix. But please check again Little Daughter.

[Meantime at the Main Cave. Time: Evening.]

Jon: Launch ladies, remember the plan. We are NOT trying to take out Manhattan, so no side trips. But we are not going to have an enemy within easy firing range either. I don't want anyone killed. Use common sense.

[The Pooper Scoopers are slowly lined up into a large shield and they take off to where the AI's are at, with the 3-6 engine ships right behind them. Rail gun remakes are ready. The AI's fire missiles and they get stuck in the Gravity wells. The missiles still have their sights on the scooters behind the gravity wells so they keep burning fuel till they run out. A few explode because a missile hits another missile but no real damage to anything. The shield and the scooters start elevating. Then all of the sudden the 3-6 engine scooters make a hard 90 turn and the shield flies at highest speed and turns off the power to the gravity wells and the previous fired missiles, bullets and artillery shells just fall on the line of military vehicles carried by the momentum. Some AI's are all that is left. The Pooper Scoopers once again turn back on the large gravity wells but align in 2 groups, flanking both

sides the scooters stay on the safe side and keep lasers on full back and forth till everything inside the zone is destroyed, melted or burning. The three 6 engine ships keep changing positions to watch out for any possible ambushes from any side, none happen. The whole group of ships disengage and go back toward the Main Cave. The F1-12's come out and Ground Pound the whole area into marbles, scoop them up and take the payload to the entrance of the Earthen Globes and drop them in for processing into needed elements and compounds for the Main Cave.

{Jon telepathically to Everyone: Great job. Send out over all the radio frequencies there is a safe haven for humans. Cindy and Melody you word the directions to see if we can get strays this way. We need to get our weapons out to other Bio Cities as we find people are in them and some bratty little kids to help their gardens. How is it going Katie?

Katie: Mia and I have been able to shutdown 14 power plants. It is just weird, the more we shut down the easier it is to get to the Tables in the others. Ms. Stitches is going through the Tables but not a lot of luck. Put a message up in the sky that states: Kill one human; we kill 100 of you. Send it out on everything that can accept it.

The T's: We are redoing the satellites to older designs that will be almost impossible for radar to see even if we didn't have so much trash in orbit. We are looking at maybe getting a reversed Gravity Pounder to clean up the atmosphere trash or maybe at least glue it together so more sunlight can get through. The Earth is 4 degrees colder than it should be and it had been within .5 degrees average every year since the late 1800's.

[Day 8. Location: Death Star. Time Midnight.]

Cathy's: See you soon moms. Got to go to C's first.

[The Commanders have a disturbed look. The C's notice it.]

C's: Hi Cathy's. Got a thumb drive for us? We have something for you to give the B's. The AI's can't see Black, like the Octopi have a problem seeing us when we are covered with it. Any ideas on how to cover the ship in Black? They would have problems seeing us visually and with radar. Well you get the ideas.

Cathy's: Sorry it is this laptop or this one. We brought a clone just in case. But why don't you ask them yourselves? Now that the Octopi are getting better, and us too, our telepathic use is getting stronger. Ships #12 to #18 have 7 barrels of Black. According to the inventory records we had, this ship only had 2 barrels and it was for medical reasons. Strange, how that sounds really strange to say now. If you approve the K's made a new rule, 1 day per week, coated or submerged in Black. Later they are planning to make sure Spiders go through a disintegration screen once per month after the treatment.

Commanders: Get coated ladies. Start rotating to the kitchen and grab some real food.

M's: We have the 13th crystal in place. Starting up the 'get to know you' routine on the second reactor. If all goes well, less than 2 hours to full station power and we will have the Gravity Pounders and full laser controls. C's, is the new stuff going to interfere with us starting up the second fusion reactor?

C's: No. We will be at the big window. Commanders meet us there when you have the chance.

[C's and Commanders arrive about the same time at the big window that faces Earth. C's put an arm in the air and do a 'cut' motion with the hand to tell Little Daughter to kill the microphones and video in the area.]

C's: Can't you get pregnant?

Commanders: We should be able. We never checked.

C's: Correct us if we are wrong, half of your envy of the Janet's is they have kids?

Commanders: And they are the T's children that is a heritage hard to live down. We know that they were offered the Commander job. So we always wonder if we make a mistake what happens.

C's: No they were asked if they could take over in an emergency. We were there. They are great planners and builders; not all that great with 'out of the box' thinking. They ended up with very little of Jon's genes in that respect.

C's: You were picked because you can, very good at it actually. Do you know what is in the Humble Files?

Commanders: No. We think the video of the K's & Pipsqueaks deaths.

C's: Yes and 1 big item, the God Equation.

Commanders: We thought that was a myth.

C's: No the K's, other K's and Pipsqueaks figured out how this universe which is only 10,000 years old appears to be trillion of trillions of years old. The whole math is barely a full page. When they figured it out, they kept waiting to become 'a pillar of salt' as the Bible says. It didn't happen. The 4 K's said, "We are so stupid." The Pipsqueaks said, "We are so small." The 6 of them found Jon and all cried on his shoulders. The equation allows us to design Black Holes or the beams which can create them which then suck in the volume we select. We really only did 2 sizes, Black Hole Grenades and the Gravity Pounder Marble or Balls which is a typical garbage truck dump. That is why only the owners of the Humble Files can build them. Know why they called them the Humble Files?

Commanders: I get it. They were humbled. They learned humility because the K's or Pipsqueaks would never say those words and mean them.

C's [quietly and blunt]: This is us being Humble, you are in charge of this Death Star station, but ultimately we are in charge of everything. If you don't fix your jealousy with the Little T's, we will throw you out the airlock personally.

Commanders: Yes Mam.

C's [normal tone and expressions]: Meet us in the medical lab. We are going to put the monitors on you. We watched the B's often enough we should know how to do it.

Commanders: Getting pregnant in a war zone is not a great idea.

C's: We win in 6 months or it will not matter. Meet you there. We need to speak with the B's.

{C's telepathically to the B's: B's can you hear us?

B's to C's: Wait a few minutes. We will call you back.

C's to B's: Okay.}

[10 min. later.]

{B's telepathically to C's: Is your help working out okay?

C's to B's: Yes but pretty much everything was fixed in the Death Star by the time they got here but the real food was great regardless and the Black was needed for sure. The AI's can't see spiders wearing Black. Can we turn the skin of the Death Star into organic fake Black? You may need to catch a few living AI's for testing. Tell Jon if he is missing a Not-Someone; she is up here with us. She saved the Janet's & Misfit's lives.

K's to All: Sorry butting in. If the AI's ignore the solar platforms as it drifts close by southern California, we are going to use it against Manhattan that is why the spiders are there which now can be accelerated.

C's to All: We notice a lot of the ships had 3 fusion reactors. We guessed they were to be used if we couldn't get the Main ones on up here. The Janet's and Misfits are working to rig in a 3rd Main Reactor complex, even if only 80% power.

K's to All: Take a deep breath and empty your minds. We am going to attempt to send you the new revisions.

[The C's sit on the floor and set back to back against each other and close their eyes. In a few minutes they get up.]

C's to All: We didn't get all of it but Cathy's can improvise they started building the Solar Platform at age 12 for a science project for school. The Solar Platform is in great shape and all of the Fusion Reactors should be operational. None showed up as bad when we first got here in the diagnostics unless breaking free broke some. Anything else?

K's to All: Not right now but let's meet in 12 hours, okay?

B's to All: We will let you know if we figure out anything then. We will figure out a way to make you Black. We just contacted Melody & Cindy. They should have us a few live test subjects soon. Bye.

C's to All: We are going to eat some real food. Yes, we are down to 127 & 130. Hard to work out with no equipment up here. Bye. }

Commanders: Janet's, are the lasers reconfigured for long bursts?

Janet's: Yes the Misfits and us have all of them done but the ones on the few onboard scooters.

Commanders: Then do you think we are ready for war?

Janet's: If we could have the extra spiders for an hour, we have 18 spare power crystals. So we can have a 3rd reactor up and running. The Misfits have been welding cables together and removing alloy beams from the now obsolete hallways downstairs. The 3rd Main will only do about 80% with the welded cables but it will have to do till we can get supplies or gut a few parts of the ship for better long cables if any are to be had.

Commanders: Great idea Janet's and Misfits. Keep up the good work Janet's. Some of our newer crew is heading your way now with their food plates. Would you like something from the Kitchen? Let them know. We should be getting a report soon from Aux, we are about to cross the Greenwich Mean Time Line.

[The Janet's look at each other with puzzled looks on their faces. Straighten up and smile.]

Janet's: Thanks.

[C's show up in the Medical Lab. Commanders are already on the table. They reach into a cabinet and put out a couple strange looking boxes.]

C's: You will feel a tingling once we attach these to you. The micro fibers go into your ovaries, uterus and fallopian tubes and check everything out. It also sends your DNA to the computer. We already have it on file but who knows with all the radiation. Why are you not pink?

Commanders: We are planning to use the Black but wanted to make sure there was enough for everyone else first. We were not on Earth during the AI's slaughter of humans.

C's: You still took a lot of radiation even up here since the station was in sleep mode. DNA is done. You are compatible with 17 donors, Jon and most of the other geniuses.

Commanders: We probably should want Jon's but we really don't want our kids to follow us. Make

them uniquely different. Why did you never have kids?

C's: 90% likely we would have human children. In our position we didn't know if we could do what we needed to do and raise human children for 18+ years. Of course now maybe we should, humans are kind of scarce. All done. You are good fertile soil. Retracting the micro fibers and detaching them. Keep the monitors on and the day both are red. You can decide if you want or not. Pick 15 or 16; we met them, they are not either of you. Both will give you the typical 95% female children and 98% of the females will be spiders possibilities. We have a redesign for the Solar Platform from the K's. That is why all the extra spiders and fusion reactors.

Aux: It appears all the satellites that had navigation in the Northern hemisphere were moved to the Southern hemisphere; there are thousands of them. We wish we could Ground Pound them all.

C's: Repeat the last thing you said.

Aux: We wish we could Ground Pound them all.

C's: Thanks. Janet's and children, meet at the big window. Bring your laptops. Whoever is in charge of our guests, too. Thanks. Is the hologram generators working? Someone get Janella out of bed and tell her that her Octopi self is needed below.

[Janet's meet the C's first at the window.]

Janet's: You know the Commanders are sick. They were nice to us. They are always respectful but never nice to us especially when our children are here. And NO we don't want to be the commanders; let Janella, or well, maybe not.

[C's have a strange look on their faces and point at the video cameras. The Janet's have a cringe look on their faces realizing the speakers and microphones are on ship wide.]

Commanders: Yes, we were sick, but the C's helped us get through it. Sorry we should never have taken out our problems on you. Say thanks, that's the best apology you get considering what you just said.

[Spiders everywhere are laughing.]

Janet's [cringing]: Thanks.

Cathy's: How do those feet taste moms?

[They are all laughing. Janet's look embarrassed. Janet's even look pink now.]

Janella: The Cathy's said we have lots of metal in the atmosphere. Anyway to make it into meteors?

Pilots: 10 billion dollar question, solar panels over California now. Not as close to the Den of Evil but an easy visual target if they want it.

[45 minutes later.]

Janella: If they had lots of ammo they would pound it, just because. It is over the Pacific now.

Cathy's: Sorry, we have to leave everyone but we are picking up a couple Octopi and heading to the Solar Platforms as soon as the solar flare hits. The Pipsqueaks gave us a 10 minute window that they figure all radars will be at best, horrid or dead. As soon as we launch do a quick course readjustment.

Aux: We will. We have full power now. We can make very quick shots at any angle.

Janella: Pipsqueaks are here.

[5 minutes later.]

{Pipsqueaks telepathically to Janella: Tell the Pilots or Aux that the station is going to weight about a ton more soon a marble is on top, 2 minutes counting down. Here picture to show them of my current 1950's dress, complete with cobalts and clear vs. rhinestones.

[Janella repeated every word as she was saying it to the broadcast system.]

Janella to Pipsqueaks: We felt it, what will it do?

Pipsqueaks to Everyone: Bye all. }

Janella: That wasn't very nice. OH, look at the windows ladies, they are covered in Black. Wee!
The O's: We are one very dull looking blob in space. We actually can walk or slide in this. Please look inside for any Black coming through the walls anywhere and we are staying out here till supper unless you find something.

Commanders: Come in O's, this might not really be Black.

O's: Okay, coming.

[Pause.] It is special blend of Bio-vitamin according to the air lock scanners.

Cathy's: We are off, bye sisters, cousins, aunts and moms and uh, [pause, perky] and everyone else.

Commanders: Everyone who can take a nap do so. We will wake you, if need be.

M's: The whole meeting room and apartment area is very, very, different. I hope this is our equipment; it looks like our equipment. It looks like it is running.

C's: Sorry ladies you were not suppose to find it this quickly. Janet's, please tell them what you were working on 1.5 years on the Moon before the War.

Janet's: Jon wanted 2 Death Stars but not in the way you think or at least not in the beginning. We made a Molecular Snapshot Imager on the Moon. It looks like a very strange landing pad on the Moon for the Death Star to have maintenance. I am pretty sure all of you were supposed to go to sleep, someone was going to knock out the C's, Commanders and Aux, right after they started the process. The war stopped the Image from ever being made.

C's, we are the Black Hole Bomb to drop most of California in the ocean, aren't we? And Cathy's the jig is off, might as well stop hiding.

Cathy's: All correct Moms. Has anyone noticed how some accident happens and yet they get fixed like Time rewrote itself?

X's: Yes. We were never going to say that aloud, we would die in rubber rooms. Even our parents said something like that a couple of times.

Cathy's: Jon and later the K's and maybe the C's or B's, have been taking those Octopi or Spiders who could not be corrected in time and have stored them on the Moon Base in Crystals. Now we don't have enough drug to knock everyone out. Start everything and meet with the Pipsqueaks.

Misfits: Yes we do. Poor all the black in the moat around the reactors and submerge, leave one set drugged to wake everyone up. We love Black we are first in.

C's: All correct. Great idea Misfits. I am not sure; why are you called the Misfits?

Janet's: Because they were the worse Spiders ever; they could not do anything right.

Misfits: Understatement, that was nice of you Janet's.

Janet's: So we took them with us to the Moon. We discovered they were great welders and that is what they loved too. They are the best welders we have now, end of story.

Commanders: Fill up the moat unless someone has a better idea and put in air hoses to make sure more than enough oxygen.

C's: We are going out the airlock to let the K's know we are on Plan B. We will be the 2 drugged.

[20 minutes later.]

Cathy's: First batch under and already asleep.

[In a few minutes the C's wiggle their way into a position between Crystals that prevents them from tipping over. The Cathy's give them the mild dose as they can to get the job done and start running for the chute down stairs hit the activation switch and once all the humming stops head for the Scooter which gets shot out into space.]

Pipsqueaks: We have you latched on and nothing is coming our way so we are going to watch this;

close your inner eyelids.

[The whole Death Star turns into a bright blue ball and then fades.]

[The rocket gets a visual on the Death Star and goes toward it.]

Little Daughter: Rocket coming our way.

[The C's wake up, pull out M's and run to the pilots seats, jump in, slaps the emergency power buttons and make a super hard dive and then a quick 90 degree adjustment. The rocket can't keep up with movements and ends up where the Death Star was at. The Pipsqueaks turn it into pieces. The Pipsqueaks and Cathy's fly through the debris and start floating along with it. In an hour, when in the lower atmosphere, they take off and go to the Main Cave.]

X's: YES! no more rocket! Wasn't there more coming?

C's: The K's told me that there is only one still looking for us. We didn't have time to ask for details. They are destroyed; score good guys more points. Yes, thanks, Aux. We are just not Pilots. I hope no one lost their lunch with the Black.

The Misfits: Can we go back to sleep now in the Black?

Aux: I have satellites in geosynchronous positions over Europe who are in dire need of melting. Us and 2 more who wants the first 4 hours?

Commanders: 1, 2, 3...

X's: Us! sorry have mouths full of tomatoes.

C's: Everyone else out. Discuss who is back up in 4 hours for target practice.

Commanders: We will start our normal shifts after that, we have lots of work to do before we meet the Solar Panels. Goodnight everyone.

[6 hours later.]

[Day 9. Location: Death Star over Europe. Time: Midnight.]

Aux: Do you see what I see on the Radar. We may be too close, backing away now.

O's: The BORG, that is one big building. Too late, missiles, lots of them, fast ones.

Pilots: Hit the alarm and we are going to grab some people out of the moat.

Commanders: How many satellites left?

Aux: None that we could find. AI's must have adopted better radar than the US.

Commanders: Not likely, we may have gotten too close.

[C's holding laptops.]

C's: Bomb sequence started. We have no choice that I can see but fight. Commanders?

Commanders: Janet's eject with the image. This may not be good for us. We have 5 times normal power, if we can use it C's? Get to the Gravity Pounders.

C's: Use it. This will be good practice for California. If we have to ram Euro city I will move power back to the bomb circuits.

Aux: Strap in ladies. Concentrate on behind us, you will understand soon.

Pilots: You're nuts! Pull the triggers on everything you have!

The Misfits: Leave the bomb armed, all 3 Gravity Pounders and front laser banks are powered. We didn't tell any one but we have 4 main power reactors. [Laughing.] One is in the old apartments.

Aux: Point lasers down. Point 2 Gravity Pounders sideways. Full drop in 3,2,1. Full speed ahead. We will be scraping Euro City.

[When the Death Star drops, the missiles fly overhead, some keep flying, others start a 180 degree turn. The Gunners start picking off most of them.]

O's: Incoming, hope the Gravity Wells grab them.

Janella: What are you doing, you woke... OH NO. I have the missiles would someone come down here and kill them. I know for sure what my kids are now, Octopi, and growing fast.

Misfits: Where are you?

Janella: Strapped to the landing gear that is looking at a giant cube.

Commanders: Go back before they can launch more missiles or we run into a Russian Cube, do a difference approach. Turn that lake into steam for cover.

Misfits: I forgot we made landing gear for our space only ship.

Janella: I have full strength now. Don't need you.

[Janella claps her hand together and the missiles all crash into one another stop and then start to drop. Aux turns a 90 degree looking like they are trying to leave toward Spain; the steam from the lake has the cube somewhat covered. A missile group is fired at them, which are dropped from a 90 degree angle.]

Pipsqueaks: Did you miss us?

Commanders: Gravity Pounders and lasers aim at the ground.

Aux: Hold on to your stomachs, FULL UP.

Pilots: Turning the ship 90 degrees to 180 degrees. Punch it.

[On the approach the Ground powders and lasers cut or collapse parts of the ground and the momentum pushes the ground debris into the building at the first floor and basement levels. The full up cuts from 1st floor to roof and then the 90 degree hit the center of the roof straight down. The forward momentum moved the Death Star beams across the roof and the 180 degrees put them into about the middle of the opposite side. Once forward momentum is done. They punch full speed over the top of Euro Cube and then make a right angle toward the ocean.]

Pipsqueaks: Aim a Gravity Pounder at the 3 scooters above the cube. Do it NOW! IT'S AN ORDER!

M's: OOOoooh. Done.

[The 3 scooters collapse into balls and drop into the cube. As they are about out of sight the cube lights up and pieces blow outward, sections of the building collapse.]

Pipsqueaks: As fast as you can get up into space.

Commanders: Thanks Pipsqueaks. M's, the Spiders in those ships died one week after the image was made, so it wasn't a suicide mission.

[Location: Landing gear, under the ship.]

Janella: I am so tangled up down here would someone please come and cut me out. Never going to watch the stars again, especially not from the landing gear.

[Everyone starts laughing.]

The C's: The 3 scooters were filled with tritium rock and plutonium and just enough broken crystals to let them not become marbles but nuclear warheads and one Black Hole Marble each. The temporary Black Hole Marble should have crushed through all the various levels to the ground before decaying into a nuclear warhead. No one was for sure if the trash marble would expand fully or not. So the AI's might be stuck digging out through 40 tons of city garbage in mashed potato form.

Pipsqueaks: This I didn't see coming. You are being followed by a group of our cold fusion reactors. Stop when you think you're safe I am going lower to better thicker atmosphere.

Aux: Once we clean out our jumpsuits, we are going to the moat.

[Everyone laughs.]

Commanders: Great job everyone. Return to standard power. Find us our Janet's. Where is the 4th

main power reactor? I don't see any holes in the floor.

Janet's: We built it sideways. We need to fill the air tanks on the Scooter.

Commanders: Great thinking, Janet's. Nice seeing you are redoing the box. So nice that we are telepathic once again. Speaking of our mother and kids helping us, out with that, cheers for our Octopi Janella!

[Janella looks embarrassed.]

Janella: The 5 of us thank you. I let my sexual frustrations all out, having been twinned with Jon for decades, when Jon and the K's were the only ones back. So I have 2 sets of identical twins the best I can tell here in space. Where are we going now?

Pilots: Toward Africa and the Equator and see how the target practice goes that direction. Do we have enough water? Or should we stop at one of the desalting factories on the coast, if still there?

Commanders: Someone check and let them know. Everyone do some diagnostics and make sure we are okay. Manhattan appears to be about 40 hours away, I don't know why either and afraid to take the chance to ask them.

Janella: I don't know what Jon and Liza are planning either.

Commanders: Stay in this hemisphere and we will get what we can, but go back to where you are exactly below Manhattan. Full speed up.

C's: We will program Little Daughter on exactly when to turn on the Gravity Pounders and laser batteries. Manhattan is not built well. The momentum should pull a lot of debris into the AI's building. A quick drop should put pieces into the building and a full up should put parts of the building through the roof. Pipsqueaks can you get with Jon & Liza? If you don't tell us NO, we figure it is a go. It might get the AI's to look at their own vs. us. We have about 8 hours of target practice ladies who are awake.

Pipsqueaks: Leaving now.

C's: Wait!

[C's close their eyes, and are making circles with their hands.]

C's: Do we concentrate on the people in Manhattan or all of the people in foreign countries? I think we should vote on whether we remove all the satellites around this planet or work on Manhattan first? We may or may not be able to rendezvous with the Solar Panels Section on time. Our idea is recalibrate the lasers and Gravity Pounding Beams to match the frequency of gravity so the Earth will bend the beams for us to shoot clear around the world at everything in the sky. We will be shooting diagonally to drop any geosynchronous satellites over the Ukraine, Russia and China and at the same time some of Central and South America. We will have to move fast enough at variable speeds so we can't get hit with our own beams.

At the equator we will have to stop for about 5 minutes and start more longitude type beams. At the South Pole, shoot anything down that might be there. Hopefully no AI city there. We will go higher and attempt to do the same till in the Northern Hemisphere.

M's: We will need to get us a polar marble for water before the return trip. This ship was never built for true out and out war. When we win, some of us have all kinds of changes to make to her. We vote, rest of the world, lift your hands who are with us.

Misfits: We will start the list. Janet's can figure out how to build it all. They're smart; they can do it.

[Everyone laughs.]

Commanders: C's let us know when to start or how to start.

C's: 2 hours till we can get the math done and rechecked. Most of this will have to be done by Little

Daughter.

[2.5 hours later.]

Commanders: Please put Little Daughter in autopilot and everyone keep your eyes peeled on what is happening.

Misfits: Turn you heads sideways and the fireworks look better. The O's moved the visual cameras out of the black goo.

Pilots: I could be wrong but I bet I see where cubes are why else would the concentration of satellites be so great?

C's: We thought of that scenario, Little Daughter please park us and start a sweeping scan at higher frequency. Please Pilots let us know when you think we should quit and Aux make sure no one is shooting at us, please.

X's: So looks like Mother Russia, Hong Kong and Venezuela.

Aux: We need to leave, 1,000 missiles coming or something really big.

Commanders: Full speed back to the Atlantic Ocean, those missiles have a limited range. Keep firing.

Pilots: Does anyone have some kind of visual? missiles or something else?

Gunner: Visual is missiles. We don't see any rockets, but I would expect some sooner or later.

C's: Cut power at 10 miles out. Apparently bombing Euro City didn't make them happy.

Janella: Don't worry you metal monsters we will be back soon.

[Everyone is cheering as the missiles run out of fuel and start splashing in the ocean water.]

Commanders: Let's continue with cleaning up the skies down South. Little Daughter please engage autopilot and continue firing the lasers and Gravity Pounders around the Earth.

The O's: Commander we have an idea. If anyone knows where we can take some power cables out of a wall or non-needed device to tie in our newly found reactors together; not lots of power but its some more.

C's: We are coming down. We want to make sure our recently acquired are not Trojan Horses.

Misfits: Janet's and us did once, but please double check. We are skilled, not smart.

Janella: Jon is calling. Okay. Okay. Sorry. 4. Bye. Ladies, Pipsqueaks are to go home if we can't make Manhattan. But a bright side, the Cave Yard has thousands of trash marbles. They dropped a bunch of decaying ones on the AI's leaving Manhattan and they are in the trash can with the other trash. So they can not advance toward the humans even if they want from that side. So we have more time. I gave him the C's idea for curved

[Long pause.] Do AI's like water?

Commanders: The soldier models would shut down most likely. Figuring now.

C's: We can take 31 marbles of ice roughly and only cut top speed 5%. Does anyone have Rhodium? Or even an alloy of it?

Gunners: Her does.

[As one spider points at the other one but both still speaking in unison. One of the spiders pulls out a very shinny strange shaped rock.]

Gunners: Here. The K's gave it to us when we liked the shape. You can use it if you need it for our war.

C's: If our idea doesn't work, we will give it back to you.

Gunners: Okay.

C's: We need to keep 6 spiders in the cargo bay at all times. They can be sleeping even, while we have the marbles on board. They have to be replaced for Bathroom breaks. This way the spiders internal gravity abilities will help keep the weight of the marbles lighter. But we still will have lesser response times.

Commanders: Aux, take the copilot's console downstairs. You or the Pilots are 1 set. Misfits your one set; hopefully nothing gets punctured. Janet's for safety we will eject you again.

Janella: I count as 1 set and maybe I can aim the 10 ton marbles when they drop some.

Commanders: We are going to fly over the Venezuela Cube, drop the marbles. They will decay fast and possible bust a lot of the walls like ice raises sidewalks or at least drown a lot of AI's as they turn to water. We don't think anyone ever made ice marbles before. IF we think it is safe we will throw a small reactor poisoned with the Rhodium to keep the place sub zero for a week or longer.

Let's all meet for some prayers at dinner in 1 hour.

[6 hours later. South Pole.]

[Day 10. Location: Death Star at South Pole. Time: 2 AM.]

Commanders: Find an iceberg the size of our water tank. Then we need 31 to turn to Black Hole Marbles. Make sure Janella knows where you are aiming so she can bring it in here.

[2 hours later.]

[The Death Star starts the return trip on the Pacific side of South American in a higher elevation to attempt to shoot down or compress any satellites surrounding the Earth into marbles. When at the same latitude with the Venezuela Cube, they head full speed at it, open the cargo doors in the bottom of the Death Star. Some of the ice marbles decay and iceberg sized chunks hit the building punching into it. Some marbles punch a hole threw the roof and parts of the building twist or sections rupture because of their expansion. A few just turn to water and run into the holes or newly formed cracks in the roof.

Gunner: 2 Rockets spotted! [Pause.] We are not sure if we got them or not.

C's: Abort the return trip to drop off the rhodium reactor.

Commanders: Aux get us over the Atlantic as fast as you can. At the Tropic of Cancer, we will attempt communications again.

Gunner: Full up, NOW!

Aux: What was that debris?

C's: Get closer to it now but not too close in case it wobbles and hits us.

Aux: This is as close as we can get. It is trying to suck us in like a black hole. The middle is still active.

C's: Nice. Anyway to tell if air is getting sucked in or just debris?

Gunner: No air is showing from out equipment. So I guess all the right junk combined to make a metal magnet.

Commanders: Leave now Aux. Can we make the Solar Panels?

Aux: Yes but only 4 hours from its target. We are over the Atlantic.

Commanders: We will figure out what to do once we can communicate again.

Janella: Hi Jon. You're in my head. What would you like us to do?

Jon: Having engine problems? Your longitude. Come wiggle that Bubble Butt at 6. Maybe Sync with Solar Panels for parts at 8. We are trying to get a fully functional engine on the Solar Panel Platform

but it takes so many trips. Bye Bubble Butt.

[Janella repeating aloud the whole conversation.]

Janella: We have the engine patched temporarily. At Martinez don't know the longitude; I will meet you at 6, horny boy; when we can get to the Solar Panel Platform. We need Power Cables. Our Red, White and Blue medicine is on the Platform, but all are in good health now. Bye.

[Long pause. Janella walks over to a computer and looks over radar screens.]

Janella: New orders ladies. We have engine problems but can only shoot off longitude waves. Start that now please. We are drifting but trying to go North to meet the Solar Panel Platform as it drifts along. Jon is fortifying the Solar Panel Platform, is all I can figure, since a gravity engine can fit in a single Scooter. We are to be at Houston at 6 PM to use our longitude wave to help stop missiles and such. If the Solar Panel Platform survives Manhattan, we use it for a shield as we take on California around 8 to 10 PM. Janet's next eject is Moon Base. I am leaving for the Table at the Martinez farm for Power Cables, so Janet's & Misfits you are on soon.

Misfits: We will take the other 4 Engine ship with you. We want parts of the Power Stations, if the table is good; the power station should be useful parts.

Janella: Can you go the speed.

Misfits: Apparently; we haven't been air headed or passed out during our emergency climbs or escapes. We were never tested, being such screw-ups originally.

[Location: Venezuela, Martinez Farm.]

[Janella & Misfits arrive at the Power Plant location.]

Janella opens an unhurt Power Station Building and shuts down the reactors probably supplying the Cube.

Misfits: Didn't know you knew how.

Janella [smiling]: Yes I used to help build these with the Beasties. I just know you have to start at the 800KV or get fried. [Pause.] Now all done. Now the 345KV. Done. I am pulling out whole sections of gems, no one but us will ever be able to fix these.

Misfits: Can you see us, the Power Cables were coated with Black and we are loading them in our scooter.

Janella: I have all the Cobalts and Rubies, loaded, before they go critical. I can get 6 crystals but do we use this size in the Death Star?

Misfits: Need any Silver?

Janella: Coated in it. So I can only barely see you. Can we use them and the alloy caps?

Misfits: Put 3 in your ship and add more Cobalts. We will do the same and start loading us up, heavy on the Ruby Diamonds too.

[Cobalts & Ruby diamonds and 4 foot long Crystals starts floating through the air dropping into Misfits' ship. Janella and the Misfits walk outside to see 2 females, standing next to the ships.]

Elena Martinez: I am Elena Martinez and sister, Maya. Please take us with you, grandma always said that you were always good to our family.

[Explosion close by, then a second explosion. Everyone is on the ground.]

{Gunners telepathically to Misfits: Got them. The AI's are being very conservative. We must have caused them more damage than we thought.}

Elena: The Machines are moving again going due East.

Janella: What was your Grandma's best friend?

Maya: The plant lady.

Janella: More info?

Elena: The fake god Isis.

Janella: I will try to send you. Put this weird clothing on and Misfits can you share some Black.

Misfits: We had extra, so here grab our hands.

Elena: You spiders look weird.

Misfits: It worked, now you look weird.

Janella: Here goes.

Maya: We believe we are the only humans in the Northern part of South America. We get radio signals everyday telling humans to go south. We figured in a year we might have to do that; our food is about gone.

[Location Main Cave.]

[The Martinez women arrive on the Long Table and are almost instantly surrounded by people with guns or spiders with AR welders.]

Martinez Woman: We are Martinez offspring. Where is the fake god Isis?

Ester: What are your names?

Martinez Woman: Elena & Maya.

Lesa: They are all human. They are in really decent health. Where were you when the war hit?

Maya: We were picking cherries off of the Isis plant next to the building where the power station is at. Everything in the shadow of the light lived everything else started dying. Most people including our parents were dead in hours or less. We have been living close to the power plant because the Machines stay away from it. Grandma had a great cellar full of canned food. I guess she never wanted to be hungry again after communism. We have been able to grow up because of it and the Isis plant blooming twice a year.

Elena: We are actually unidentical twins. We were 10 when the war hit. Today is the first time we saw anyone human. We will help, anyway we can. Please let us stay.

Ester: Come on down. I kept some of Angel's gift, they are fine in the morals department.

[Meanwhile at the Death Star.]

Misfits: Is the Death Star wobbling?

Pilots: Yes, hoping to catch any missiles the Cube might send your way, without looking like we are in good health.

Janella: The AI's are on the ground going due east probably to get their missiles out of the water. They were really bad shots. The Martinez ladies, I sent back to the Main Cave. The tables are barely working I am guessing another reason to be doing longitude waves. There are probably no humans in the North everyone has been told to go south for years.

Commanders: C's can you figure out a way to crush the AI's and let everything decay fast so we might not kill all the plant life?

Pilots: Gunners get us exactly where the AI's are if you can?

[Long pause.]

Gunners: I have them. They like idiots are grouped together. A few thousands are grouped. In 10 minutes it will not look like we are using or doing anything a cripple couldn't do.

C's: Working as fast as we can!

[10 minutes later.]

C's: FIRE!

Gunners: Uh, [pause]. Maybe a few are left but the mass is mud.

Commanders: Will we get any chance at another shot at the Cube?

Janet's: Need everyone who can to the old meeting rooms and bedrooms. If we can get our hitchhiker reactors up to full power we might be able to fake a LOSE OF MAIN GRAVITY ENGINES and not go splash.

Janella: Sorry forgot, we cut all the power to the Cube from our power station at the Martinez Farm.
[Commanders, Pilots and C's together discussing things.]

C's: ETA? We are coming down.

Janet's: 55 minutes.

C's: 43 or no shot. Janet's you are joining our Clan, in case you need knowledge on the Moon you don't have. Coming there now.

[Janet's and C's: Touch foreheads and the Janet's are stunned for a minute or so, the C's drop to the floor slowly.]

Commanders: You okay C's.

[C's look at the Commanders with Silvery eyes.]

C's: That was not expected on our part.

[1 minute later C's with ear to ear smiles and eyes back to normal.]

C's: Wrong wiring ladies. This goes here. [Pointing.] This goes here. [Pointing and 10 more times.]
Pilots, feed all the power to the Gravity Pounders while we bring these up to full power and then move power to Engines. Repeat till 3 minutes before we could hit the Cube.

Commanders: Sorry C's you don't think in 3 dimensions, a Khan problem. Drop attitude each time and then move all power from the Engines as you direct all the power to the lasers. Get the idea Gunner?

Pilots: We never expected the Gravity Engines to work so well over land and in dense atmosphere, even if we were to submerge we will still be able to get out of the water quickly once we get close to the shelf. Leave the lower levels in 10 minutes. It might get hot down there.

Janella: I am staying close in case I could put a power cable back in place or disarm a faulty reactor.
[12 minutes later.]

Janella: 1 minute to target. Get us over land after our mishap.

C's: 5, 4, 3, 2, 1 FIRE.

[2 minutes later.]

Pilots: Hold on to your stomachs.

Gunners: WEEEEEE! [Long Pause.] Hard turn to land Pilots in 5,4,3,2,1 GO!

Pilots: Climbing and dropping repeats. Aux anything coming our way.

Aux: NO. Absolutely nothing from the West, East beautiful skies and lots of sunlight with good radar. We are looking for a Mexican Cube but cannot see anything yet.

Commanders: If the Engines work better in Atmosphere say here.

[Sternly.] Janella, thanks for the idea.

[Janella gets a Spider frown on her face and bottom lip sticking out.]

C's: Get us exactly on the Magnetic Line. The AI's know we have gravity propulsion, thanks to an cured ex-addict who was sorting rocks. Genius comes from all kinds of places, right Little Jon?

[Janella has an ear to ear smile.]

Janella: I will behave, promise, maybe.

[The C's laugh knowing that is a common Jon expression.]

Janet's: Get your spider butt down here! We are going to cut 25% of this auxiliary power to replace a burned French fry. C's, I didn't know these work in hexagon shapes, anyway we could get an image of this to take to the moon, so we have for Death Star 2?

Pilots: Don't need it right now, you could even power down to minimum for now, if you would like to check out the Spider Rigging.

Misfits: No such thing as Spider Rigging, spiders always do the very best.

[Misfits can't hold it in and start laughing as they are looking at the 4th Main Power reactor laying on its side hanging with slapped together beams and cables. Then everyone starts laughing.]

[10 minutes later.]

Janet's: I have to report the surgery was a success and the Death Star's power is 240% original design. We cavemen have fire.

C's: Leave the lower areas, I will start another Image of hitchhikers and such.

{Janella telepathically to Jon: Hi.

Jon to Janella: Are we still making our 6 PM, I have you penciled in for 1 hour, but I forgot, at your current time or mine. I plan a nice pounding for the hour you sex fiend. We have been putting an engine on the Solar Panels so they can meet you wherever you happen to land in the US, since you are having even more engine problems. Great job on South America, the cube is mostly rubble, even if it damaged MY ship.

[Pilots point East.]

Janella to Jon: Only an hour, oh well horny boy, you will have to make do. Your time.

Jon to Janella: Bye Bubble Butt. }

[Location Main Cave.]

[Jon & Lesa are sitting on the Main Table. Jon's arms around Lesa and Lesa's eyes are silver then blue.]

Lesa: Conversation sent to the Cyborg.

[Janella repeats whole conversation.]

Commanders: In English please.

Janella: At 6 PM EST we hit Houston for 1 hour, if the Solar Panel Platform is alive, it will meet us and then we drop southern California in the ocean as fast as we can.

Commanders: Pilots, start a little more of a wobble. Why does Jon call you Bubble Butt?

Janella: When I am on some kind of mission, Jon says as I walk away and my butt wiggles a certain way. Jon could always tell if I was loafing or on a mission or job.

C's: O's can you get me a clean Big Window. I need to see if the K's are speaking in code or not?

O's: Meet you there.

[C's get to the Big Window and the O's finish cleaning off the Black.]

{C's telepathically to the K's: Can we talk?

K's: Yes we are on a clear channel. Manhattan is getting pounded starting at 5:30 EST minutes before you start toward Houston. Jon does not expect smallest Michigan to help but 2 F1-12's are going to launch if they seem to be powering up. Main Cave is doing the finishing of Manhattan while platform runs full speed to meet you somewhere around Arizona. Houston may help or arm

themselves for what they think is a platform coming for them. By the time they figure out it is heading to California, Liza's forces will be flanking Houston at 5:45 EST, dropping marbles from Henry's farm and will be gone by the time you arrive. Your lasers and Gravity Pounders will decay the marbles and set those tons and tons of garbage on fire. Use new methods of attack each time. AI's are not good at 'Out of the Box' thinking and very 2 dimensional or else they would have copied us and had fighters. Make sure you keep the backup plan safe.

C's: Thanks for closure. Bye sisters.}

C's: Get all of that Commanders, Pilots and Aux?

Aux: Yes C's. We can improvise if timing gets off.

Commanders: Pray, get some food, cat nap, whatever. Moat in 40 minutes for re-imaging with all our new toys.

[Sexpot's Escape.] [TOC](#)

[Location: California Cave. Time: 5:15 PM EST.]

Sexpot: I am so hungry, please bring me some food.

[A human with half its head removed looks at Sexpot and returns with a plate of food and she starts spoon feeding Sexpot. Sexpot gets a leg free and grabs the human by the waist and breaks her back and she falls to the floor unable to move. Sexpot kicks off the cyborg attachment on the human's head and mashes her foot into the top of the cyborg brain. In a minute, Sexpot's eyes turn silver and she breaks free completely and walks over to the human and rips open her chest, puts her over her head, absorbing all the blood. Sexpot walks over to the machine that houses the brains and touches them and they shrivel up and die. Then Sexpot sees the Atlantean Cyborg and takes the long cylinder that had the brains in it and throws it at the Atlantean's chest. It stops in midair about 1 foot from his chest. Then Sexpot does a thrust with her arms and it goes all the way through him.]

Sexpot: I am sorry I was going to eat that heart. I guess I will have to settle for all that blackish blood.

[Sexpot sees a tool box on the floor behind him and pulls it to her hitting him hard in the back of the head and the Atlantean falls on his knees. The toolbox opens and tools go everywhere. Sexpot pulls up 3 chisels and stabs the Atlantean in the spinal column in his neck and rips off his head. Sexpot looks him straight in the eyes.]

Sexpot: No way am I going to let them put you back together again. Bye.

[Sexpot throws the head in the air and does a thrust with her arms and the head hits the wall so hard it only looks like a splash of pinkish green paint. The Atlantean's steel skull is mashed flat and drops to the floor.]

{Sexpot telepathically to Lesa: I am free. Atlantean is dead. Can you help me get a bearing on the Table in here.

Lesla to Sexpot: Walk around, down a hallway, something.

Sexpot to Lesla: I have it but will have to figure out how to get to it. See you soon I hope.

Lesla to Sexpot: Hurry, cold food in 1 hour.

[Sexpot starts running down the hallway to find herself in a kitchen full of cyborg humans. Sexpot smiles and goes after them with 2 long knives absorbing all the blood then runs out of the kitchen and keeps running down hallways some are dead ends. Sexpot is like a mouse in a maze.]

[5:25 PM EST]

Gunners: Manhattan attack is on; they are 5 minutes early.

Pilots: We have links to our new satellites. Main Cave has been very busy. Houston & Michigan are not coming in on the fight. We are well within range of Houston. Strap in everyone, we are in a great visual view from California and Houston. We are going to look like our stabilizers are dying too. Slow rotation, gunners watch closely so we don't squash anyone.

Gunners: Clockwise or counter?

Pilots: Counter clockwise.

[5:43 EST]

Aux: Houston is under attack by Liza's crew.

The M's [singing]:

There is, beyond the azure blue, a God concealed from human sight.

He tinted skies with heav'nly hue and framed the worlds with His great might.

There is a God, he is alive, in him we live,

and we survive;

From dust our God created man. He is our God the great I AM!

[Everyone starts singing.]

[5:58 EST]

Misfits: Okay we have you all strapped in well, even your Frankenstein gear. The drug will keep your brains from turning to mush and you ate your red diamonds so you will be able to walk on the moon. Suit fit okay in there?

Janet's: Yes we are in great shape here. Just waiting for the launch you better leave now. I think we are ahead of schedule.

Misfits: See you in your or our next lives. That is confusing. Bye.

Pilots: Full speed in 10,9,8,7,6,5,3,2, [Full Speed].

Commanders: Smoke screen. [Pause.] Eject water tank.

Gunner: It's steam. Launch!

[The Janet's 6 engine ship ejects out the launch bay into the steam cloud toward the Moon as the Death Star leaves the area.]

[Pause.]

Gunners: Firing. Everyone else fire at will.

Aux: Starting new wobble up and down, worse we can do is cook some fish.

Commanders: In 1 minutes add side to side. We need new plan; this is just plain weird.

C's: Put 2 Gravity Pounders on pulses in 2 minutes.

M's: California is launching missiles but to save their own skin. They are aimed at the Solar Panel Platform, just now barely in range.

{K's telepathically to Death Star Crew: Engage autopilot, trust us.

Commanders to Everyone: Done. }

M's: Houston launched rockets from the opposite side; they will have to turn 180 degrees. We must have done more damage to this side than we see.

[Long pause.]

M's: In this position we are sitting ducks there are 1000 missiles coming for us. Are they going fast and then slow?

O's: They are dying; their last heartbeats. Rest in peace Cindy, Cynthia and Noose.

Misfits: Close you inner eyelids. See the sine wave ladies? Easy to fly.

Gunners: Missiles are disappearing. What are those things leaving the Platform?

Janet's: Liza's crew was parked on the sea and are flying the sine wave. They are cutting up the missiles with old style bullets apparently. Our Gravity Pounders on pulse are pulling them into the other side of the AI's Bio-City. Ooooh how sad.

{K's telepathically to Death Star Crew: Disengage and do a full up in 5,4,3,2,1.}

Pilots: Hold on. [Long pause.] We are in the mesosphere. Little Daughter please check our gauges are they accurate? The Solar Panel Platform was on the left side, now its on the right

Little Daughter: Gauges are correct and the Platform is moving at almost Death Star speed away from the missiles. The missiles are now going toward whatever was left of the Platform a few minutes ago.

The M's: Contact. [Long pause.] The missiles hit a blob of sky junk. Platform is doing a turn.

Gunners: The Platform is on track to southern California at Death Star speeds.

Commanders: Fly to the best place to join with the Platform.

{The Q's telepathically to the Death Star Crew: Hi we are the suicide crew. Not really, we already had a great first life and a good death, now we get to have a good second death. All of us only have a few months to a year to live anyway. We are rising up to upper atmosphere. As missiles are launched we will be dropping off more sky junk or marbles on quick decay. We will lead the dive downward, stay behind us and upward a little for cover. There are 150 scooters onboard that are leaving to scrap off all the reactors on top of the city. Each ship has enriched uranium or plutonium, helium and tritium rocks.

[The Q's start talking like Donald Duck.] We should have tried this in our previous life; our throats tickle. We are Helium-Bombs.

C's: Okay, I am even lost here. How did the AI's allow 135 ships to stay there, if they didn't know about the first 15 that came here.

Q's: We asked the Nobody's to make us a Table on the Platform. Katie's clan made it grow. We brought all the Scooters in pieces. Everything was made with all Cave ingredients and we had Katie, Krystal, Mia and Miss White's Crew helping, so everything is Table transportable. Oh, we see the Death Star now.

Pipsqueaks telepathically to Everyone: Just to inform Liza and crew is going to Michigan with the F1-12's, Manhattan is burning. Main Cave is coming to clean up after today's main event.}

[Location: Launching area of the Death Star.]

Pilots: California is in sight. AI's are launching everything they have which really is not that much. Metal Monsters are you out of bullets?

C's: Automatic self destruct armed. Bye ladies. She blows at 200 feet or do the manual if Little Daughter is killed off.

Q's: We are breaking up in pieces now. And our 951 lasers are ON and rotating positions every 30 seconds at present.

[As the missiles hit falling sky junk or decaying marbles, the pieces are recombining into larger pieces from the Gravity Pounding Beams. Some pieces are pulling in missiles sideways vs. them hitting the platform.]

Gunners: We are firing through the holes with lasers.

Aux: Kill lasers in 3,2, 1. Moving us over the platform again. Big hole on left.

Gunners: Bye bye San Francisco. Lasers and Gravity Pounders. Say clear ladies.

hit, boom, boom, boom, boom, hit, boom, boom, hit, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, hit,

XD2's: This coat belongs to you we presume.

Alex: Yes it is mine. Thanks. Will she be okay?

XD2's: Yes, she is immortal, probably recovering from all her injuries. Soon we will go after all the other AI Cities and mash them, like this one.

[Scooter makes a dinging noise. XD2's reach in the Scooter and pull out 2 AR pistols. 3 AI's start to show from the valley. XD2's shoot them, one bullet each.]

XD2's: Come on humans, we will show you how to take them apart and use some of the parts.

[XD2's show how to pop them apart, crush the crystal the rest of the way and spread it everywhere and how to use the batteries and solar panels.]

XD2's: Here are the gun parts but no value against them, just humans, but no bullets. Here are our pistols and we will give you our ammo.

Alex: You don't need these for yourselves?

XD2's: The Main Cave is producing lots more. Once we leave the scooter is immune to AI bullets. We don't know how we are going to rebuild the human race, we still have AI Cities around the world to destroy. We will let you know when we figure it all out.

Bad news, if you see a man or woman with half their hair shaved off their head in the front or back or even part of the skull removed. If you see scars on them, kill them. The AI's took out ½ of their brains and put in robotic brains. They can NOT be fixed. They have no memories and can't form new ones. The only knowledge is what the robotic brain has, which is to kill humans, so you too can become one of them. Bye.

[XD2's start to get in their scooter and see parachutes.]

XD2's [loudly]: Go to where the parachutes are landing. There should be rifles, ammo and some food. The food is super potent, 2 ounce package max per day should keep you alive. Filters that allow you to drink about anything with water in it like mud puddles even.

[Day 13. Location: Lunar Orbit. Time Midnight. (About 48 hours since complete Southern California destruction.)]

[Location: Inside the Moon Base.]

[Janet's fly around the moon to the dark side to see the Moon Base is powered up and expanded.]

Janet's: I hope that Death Star setting there is ours.

[Janet's land and go through the Air Docks. 2 Spiders [Beasties] greet them. Mimic what the K's do with arms crossed, deep frowns and intensely look at them move back and forth looking at each one of them. [Pause.] Then the spiders have ear to ear smiles.]

Spiders: We are Lin. Welcome here Little T's.

Kala: Did you bring any food?

[Kala, a taller woman, dressed in black leather top to bottom walks up to them.]

Janet's: Spider tubes.

Kala: Oh well.

Janet's: Have you been down to the basement? We left a bunch of Isis plants and other plants; we are guessing they grew.

Kala: What basement?

Janet's: Little Daughter please open the Basement and the Dead Vault. We are entering password now.

[A few doors close to rooms with people inside, then the floor moves. All the doors reopen. From space a whole ring of the Moon Base moves counterclockwise. A few plant vines move up into the

hallway from a large opening in the floor. The vines look like they are looking at Kala, the Beasties and then at Janet's. The vines wrap around the Janet's and the Janet's rub them and purr. Plants unwrap and disappear down the hole. The Janet's go down the ramp, everyone else follows. Janet's pick some fruit as they go, rinse it off in the water canal and eat it. Janet's purr again.]

Janet's: How many are here?

Kala: Only 300 now of the ones who survived the radiation and some that were teleported here have just died of natural causes.

Janet's: Kala call everyone down to eat or grab stuff to cook. You can't stay down here without an oxygen mask. The air is heavy in CO2 gas. Can the Death Star Beta fly yet? Just a thousand feet would be good.

Kala: Already called them, it will be a few minutes, most are in the Death Star Beta as you called it. Maybe, we are on manual controls and only auxiliary power. We don't know how to power on the Main Reactors.

Janet's: Little daughter. Authorize all libraries about the Death Star and Moon Base and information within them to Kala. Stop. How do we know you are you?

Kala: Okay, fair enough.

[The Janet's look at their chests and can't breath because their hearts stopped. Janet's do a thumbs up signal and start breathing again. Winged-folk start arriving.]

Janet's: At the end of that hallway will be a lot of picked fruit that is ripe. Put in buckets and let's eat. All fruit needs washed off in the clean water canal here or elsewhere. If you start getting a headache or 30 minutes go by, LEAVE! Oops, Little Daughter please continue with previous command. We have to get to the Death Star Beta and see if we can get her moved.

[Kala and the Janet's go down a few hallways and board the Death Star Beta, climb up ladders till on the Command Center Deck. The Janet's open various cabinets on the way through to check the contents.]

[Location: Command Deck of Death Star Beta.]

Janet's: Little Daughter please run a self diagnostic and show on main screens.

[Silence.]

Janet's [disgusted]: Okay then. [Growl.]

[Janet's climb up a ladder slide some doors open and look at a large array of wiring, Cobalt and Ruby diamonds with lots of Crystals lined up in banks. Janet's press some buttons and the light show through the gems. Kala is flapping her wings and watching over their shoulders. Janet's see one Crystal not lit and one of them pulls it out, puts it into what appears to be a tester and the tester says, 'Dirty'. One of the Janet's takes out the crystal and rubs it against her spandex and puts the crystal back in the tester, "Good", then puts the crystal in the proper location. Everything lights up.

Janet's: Beautiful. Little daughter please run a self diagnostic and display on the main screens.

[The Janet's jump down to the floor and walk over to the screens to see lots of red all over the ship.]

Kala: I thought we did better than that. Glad we didn't figure out how to get the Main's on. Is there anything to go back to on Earth?

Janet's: The K's did some physics voodoo and Jon in his 82nd year was brought back to life with all the people in the Main Cave that day. We think we cleaned out the AI Cities in American and maybe South America but can't be sure. You will understand more soon. Little Daughter please only show malfunctions in areas needed for lift off.

Kala: 1. Nice. Did my people come back?

Janet's: No, except for a few Beastie Spiders. The K's didn't say anything about it, good, bad or

indifferent. Even if the snapshot didn't include Big City Cave, for sure over ½ of it was there for Jon's birthday. Sorry I don't know. We will ask when we can.

Kala: Thanks.

Janet's: We redesigned this whole junction about a month after the original launch. We can do some Spider rigging to keep this together for a few months.

The Main Cave can make us the part and ship it to us, once we finish our war with the AI cities. Hi ladies. We need a tool box on the sub level. We also need some extra bracing underneath the Clarity Crystal on the Main Floor. Cut out or whatever to fix and brace the floor. Oops. Forget that. First check and make sure none of the floor panels under any of the 26 main power crystals can flex, brace whatever you find.

Jan's [Spider Beasties]: We found the floor panel on the 13th Crystal was 1 mm too wide and long. We cut it down and then welded it in solid a long time ago. We couldn't figure out why too big. But we will check the other floors, just to make sure.

Janet's: Pick me who is the best of your Spiders and follow us and an alternate. We need to show you how to fix this junction flaw in case it breaks in flight. Our first fix should keep it together for about 3-6 months but it will wear out and every next fix will last less time, each time.

Jan's: We are it. We are the only Spiders. We had taken the Silver on the day we appeared here.

Janet's [looking at Kala and the rest]: We are impressed. We need help.

[Janet's walk over to a white board, take the markers and do some figuring.]

Janet's: Backtrack. We need to wake up the Death Crew. Follow us, bring tools.

[Location: Hydroponics Basement.]

[Janet's backtrack to the Hydroponics Basement, look at a wall and then sees the secret latches, pop off their shoes and climb up the wall and pull both latches at the same time, 2 sections of wall fall down and some beasties pick up the panels and lean them up against the other wall. Kala looks inside and turns on the light switch, revealing a long hallway with about 30 large crystals with people in them. A prerecorded voice repeats. These are all the people who will always die within a certain period of time less than 10 days. Free Carrie Ann first, the first Crystal next to the doors.

Janet's: Okay see if we can try this.

[Janet's lay their hands on the large crystal and close their eyes and their heads slowly tilt side to side. Carrie Ann's eyes open, fear at first, then she sends her hand through the Crystal and Kala grabs her hand and slowly pulls her out. They hug each other. The Janet's remove their hands and the Crystal goes back to normal.

Carrie Ann: I will do the rest.

Kala: Potent-red are in bloom. But if you didn't know this area is very high in CO2 gas. Terri stay behind with them to show them to the Death Star or wherever the Janet's are. Sorry Little T's to you all. Wash all the fruit before you eat it. We have tons of vegetables now that we learned of here and fruit but only Spider Tubes for meat. Remember, wash the fruit before eating it.

Janet [loudly]: Spiders follow us.

[Carrie Ann walks back up ahead of everyone else, some still getting their bearings.]

Carrie Ann: All good and alive. I will turn off the recording be back in a minute.

[Carrie Ann walks over to switch, flips it off and starts walking back and a ceiling metal brace comes down hits her head dead center and she falls over dead.]

Janet's: Moms always said she always dies within days. She became a Christian, Octopi and then dies soon. God is good!

Janet's: Spiders come with me, we need to fix a junction on the Death Star Beta and then get it up

and away from the platform.

Jan's: We have 2 platforms; the robots built just the minimum on #2, the machine shop was cloned multiple times. They cloned most things multiple times. We have tons of raw materials from the thousands of Black Hole trash Marbles that were left here plus the dust on the moon. We now know where all the Bio-vitamin is going now and why very little Bio-food products.

[15 minutes later the Janet's show how to fix the faulty designed junction. Janet's sit in the pilots seats and start turning on circuits. Jan's get in the Auxiliary Pilots chairs.]

{Janet's telepathically to Everyone: Okay ladies everyone leave. We will walk back soon.}

Jan's: Auxiliary power at 90% that should be enough.

Janet's: Bring Main Reactor on but leave at minimum, can't be too careful. Little Daughter please close doors and bulkheads. Once the other Death Star is re-imaged, we should fix minor problems and take this to Mars and back before it goes to war.

Jan's: What?

Janet's: You will understand shortly. Jan, please do the honors and fly us up and over to the second pad.

Jan's: Sure?

Janet's: Have to learn sometime.

[Long pause.]

Jan's: WEEEE, we didn't bump.

[Long pause.]

Aligning.

[Pause.]

Landing. Houston we have no problems.

Janet's: Houston was one of AI's Cities. We did it great damage, don't know if all are dead or not.

Jan's: We have outer hatch lock in 5,4,3,2,1. No leaks. Time to go back to Base.

Janet's telepathically to Everyone: Sit down, swallow any food you might be eating. Take a deep breath, anyone not ready speak.

[Pause, Janet's sends a telepathic burst to everyone and after a couple of minutes everyone starts getting things set up.]

Janet's: Kala, please wake us up when ready. We want to double check everything before we power up fully.

[3 hours later, they wake the Janet's. The Janet's start walking around the reactors and Image Globe.]

Janet's: Little Daughter, please start diagnostics on the image setup if nothing is wrong, then start the re-image process. Kala would you do the honors only 3rd tier command up can do this.

[Kala grabs out her phone and types in the password.]

Kala: I don't know why I carry this phone, our telepathy works now that we have soaked in drums of Black a few times.

Little Daughter: Diagnostics all good, starting sequence.

Janet's: Look out the windows. Let's all have a prayer that this works.

Our God please help us restore the human race, to teach them to obey your laws and not be self-righteous and ignore your commandments. Please forgive us of our sins. In Jesus's name. Amen.

Kala: What if I wasn't here?

Janet's: We are in the C's chan now so we are 1st level tier.

[6 hours later. The C's wake up dazed. Once they get their bearings, they wiggle out and pull Pilots out of the Black to get the Black out of their lungs, then Aux, M's, O's, X's, Gunners and

Commanders. They all start walking out the tunnel to the base and when they open the doors to the Moon Base, they are given a heaping plate of cooked vegetables and a bowl of fruit.

[Kala says a prayer before eating.]

Pilots: This is so good. I forgot how much I love fruit.

[Everyone of the Crew purrs, and continues eating.]

[30 minutes later.]

Janet's: Look out the west windows. West it that way [pointing].

C's and Pilots: How long?

Misfits: How did we do, you haven't said yet?

Janet's: The best we can tell from a hundred thousand miles away is that Houston was still burning and California imploded. So we really could not see much after that. As far as the other ship, 12 hours if everyone works on it. It has the junction box issue but is patched and I showed multiple people how to fix it.

Pilots: We need to know about Earth but we don't dare ask. If we ask those not with us, which should be everyone but the Death Crew, the AI's might send a rocket full of nuclear warheads.

Kala: Talk to Earth, I guess I was around Jon too much; this base it armed in every way we could come up with. Will this image reproduce?

C's: Only if the Death Star it truly non-existent. We knew when we made the image we would be a marble, energy or something similar. We will take a Gravity Scooter to the edge and see if we can talk to the K's in 4 hours 22 minutes. So if okay with Kala, get to work ladies.

Commanders: Anyway we can do your improvements Janet's?

Misfits: You're late, we are placing supports now in Beta. The only part of the Death Star Beta done was the absolute necessary parts. We have all kinds of room, cabling and the Death Crew were in 30 of the 12 foot crystals. We have fire!

Kala' crew made tons of alloy and tons of reactors and power cables. Not now but later tell us how please. If we change out the faulty connector this might be the better ship to take to war again, just the Misfits opinion.

Kala: Why did my people not come back in the snapshot of Jon's birthday?

C's: We only had so much power, so we had to cuts options out. But the reason your people was chosen was because we didn't know where you were to warn you or them. One group not knowing 10 years had passed would think they were being invaded and the re-imaged people would be dead. Others don't have claws and wing blades.

People just started popping back into existence all over the place and not at once. We had to play over and over a recorded message. If all of sudden a beastie showed up next to you would you kill it or talk to it in a time of war?

Kala: I understand. Will it work later?

C's: Don't see any reason it will not but we will have to do in stages. We never realized but material things came back also like fighters, ammo, fusion reactors. I am guessing everything Kala City will need to be moved to the empty caves that is there now or maybe not. The K's and Pipsqueaks created the whole idea. We and the B's were never at their skill set and then the war started. The B's died and we turned into human fatlings.

[Day 14. Location: Moon Base. Time: Midnight.]

Kala: For everyone's knowledge, Clara moved us, as far as we can tell, with a lake of Black, filled full of Cobalts, Crystals and Rubies. I don't know if Clara gave us large amounts of Spider Tubes

or they were already here. Attempting to save us, might be the only good thing Clara ever did, other than leave us alone for years.

Commanders: Janet's pick which one we take to war before we may or may not change the junction box, because the Crew choice will be different. We are imaging both before we leave unless Earth says NOW!

Janet's: Misfits, as soon as done with current welding and where others can take over, we want you. We want you and O's to inspect the outside very well, then the inside hulls. We are inside the Death Star Beta if you need us. Also anyone can you think of any improvements we made in the Death Star's 12 years in orbit before the war?

Misfits: What do you want us to do little boss?

Janet's: We owe you one. Test some welds you didn't do, pick most stressful areas. They look good but [pause] well you know.

X's: We want the Beta, Kala has 10,000,000 rounds of the original Wildcat cartridge because we have room to mount the rail guns.

Commanders: 10 million, WOW. I feel faint.

Kala: More elsewhere. What can I say? We stayed busy, nothing else to do up here. We have no males to drain.

Janet's: If you would have only known. Little Daughter, from this time onward, be wide open with all information to anyone in rank of 10th or above. Thank you. Please display all building information on screens now in 3D.

[A large 3D picture of the whole Moon Base shows and some people have to walk out of the image.]

Janet's: Kala, right here is the Sperm Bank, don't use XXX. All the rest is every single donor Sexpot, Lesa, Erin, and Linda ever found that is compatible. A few are marked by race only, most are good for all. XXX is fed to the Isis plants. It's all the donors tested not compatible. The fertility cocktail is AAA, I think.

Janet's: X's go through the machine shop and Earthen Globe areas and see if you see anything Christmas list quality. We feel like we are missing a good something to add.

Gunners: A feature request. When we have the time to wait on missiles coming our way. A computerized tilt, that all the bullets or lasers that don't hit the missiles will hit the City somewhere. Second feature request. A 3 second computerized target shoot of secondary gun bullets then lasers at the original launcher area, maybe a new missile is getting ready.

Sweet [spiders]: You have 7 sets of spiders who have very little time left give us gun and laser stations. If we fall over dead, you're still good.

Kala: I have talked it over with some of the very old Beasties who can barely walk now, they can run guns too. I have them playing war games now.

Corisay: Ladies, I will make the Feature Request program for the computers so people can put in as they think of them and vote with a yes or no for others already there.

Kala: The robots are duplicating the scooters. Anything else you want duplicated? The robots can duplicate well.

X's [over intercom]: Found it! Earthen Globe reflection wall sections. The computer told me that we can make a circle with them 2 cm less than the diameter of the ship, so we will not hit the top and bottom connection bolts till 10 cm. So we could put in gunner stations in between the top ship ½ globe and bottom ½ globe. So we will be 1 meter out of round.

[Long Pause.]

Janet's: Make the ring circular movable like our Moon Base floor, which I happen to be standing on

the divide in the floor so we don't run out of bullets. Leave the area on a vacuum so heat will not be a problem. We are going with Beta as is with all the improvement we can make. IF we have war longer than 2 months, we get the part and get back to the moon and fix it. We don't have 3 days to replace the part and leave the ship dead right now. Wire all new circuits into #2 junction box you can, leaving enough cable to go back if need be later to #1. The robots should have #2 made shortly, improved but still will need replaced in a year or so.

C's: Leaving now to see if conversations will work this far, if not I will send radio be back around in 30-45.

[20 minutes later.]

{C's telepathically to K's: Are you there?}

[Long pause. C's waiting on time lag.]

C's: Radio, Main Cave, Spider Anarchy, number 2 is alive and well. We have disappeared friends here at 3 O'clock. 30 newbies, and a brand new #3. How soon do we empty the 429's?

[Time lag pause.]

[Location: Main Cave, Table Area.]

Big Brother: Radio, communication from C's as follows:

Main Cave, Spider Anarchy, number 2 is alive and well. We have disappeared friends here at 3 O'clock. 30 newbies, and a brand new #3. How soon do we empty the 429's?

Jon telepathically to the K's: What are they saying? I only get ½. Addressed to you, Death Star is back, Kala' clan, not a clue, 30 are the death crew, a brand new Death Star, what are 429's?

K's: 3 o'clock, why not AM or PM or military time. Got it: 300 of Kala's clan lived. 429's are the calibers we were planning to use in the Death Star and ended up with laser, they have a second Death Star with guns and they want to know when we take out the rest of the AI's.

Things are calm but probably don't want to give AI's too much time to rebuild or rethink.

Jon: Empty 429's at your convenience but don't let them rot in 7 days. Cindy, twin and children have died, rest in peace. Add whatever you need.

K's: Big Brother, please send back to the Moon, "Empty 429's at your convenience but don't let them rot at 1/8 moon. Love new idea, bring with. Use up the newbies. Cindy and family has died, rest in peace. We will send an F-110 to pick you up.

[Time lag.]

C's: Live long and prosper.

[C's fly back to dark side of the Moon.]

{C's telepathically to Kala: Everyone take a rest. Be back soon.}

[Location: Moon Base.]

Kala telepathically to Everyone: Everyone who has been up over 24 hours, eat and bed now. Things are calm downstairs. There is no good time to be pregnant but everyone start testing to see who can get that way. I am getting Skate's fertility drug for me and others let me know, so I don't miss anyone.

[35 minutes later.]

C's: Hi Kala, this place sounds like everyone is sleeping.

Kala: Yes they are and I wanted to wait on you before I do the same. I need a schedule for the Spiders and my clan to get into for our other standard 12 hour shifts.

C's: I couldn't talk so had to code a message. They want us there within a week; we can pick timing. They want us to use the Dead Squad newbies for sure. They are coming to get us with an F-110. The only F-110 is a marble, it was a drastic failure and imploded. [Pause.]

I think I want to launch the Death Star as soon as possible and with almost all the Death Crew. Cindy, her twin and children were the brains that powered the super fast missiles; she is resting in peace, so the Death Crew could be replaced from the ground if needed. I am going to send Pilots with them as the only ones from original crew, they are so much wiser than when I first met them. They will be the pilots and commanders and have them eject if need be.

Let the Death Star take on the least problem AI Cities. We will launch Beta as soon as she is ready and tested if the Janet's want to do any of that. Beta should not need more than a day to travel back as long as the Gravity Well catches any debris or we can fly by it.

Kala: I am not a physicist but if you timed it right, you could aim your Gravity Pounding Beams and laser beams at the remaining Cities. Eat debris on the way and the beams might do some damage.

C's: Yes we could keep debris out of the way. Not as effective as you would think on the ground, there is 250 miles of atmosphere or so. We have Europe, Venezuela and Houston which might be only damaged and doubtful but Detroit too. Russia and Hong Kong are alive and well.

We doubt the Main Cave has done anything special but keep building parts and such otherwise. We never were sure about South Africa or anything Africa actually. Goodnight Kala, we are going to grab a veggie plate and go next. Please Little Daughter tell us of problems and wake us up. Just flash to say yes.

[A lot of lights in their area flash off and on. Kala walks to the Kitchen area and puts up information on the White Board, then goes off to her roost.]

[6-8 hours later, people start heading to the kitchen. The Death Crew start packing meals for the trip to Earth. They all smile when they realize they have nothing else to pack. All the spiders join the Clan of Janet's and C's.]

Pilots: The packing list is on the monitors. Little Daughter please check off items as 2 people or 2 sets of spiders check off an item, please. Then we are leaving for Earth.

[The Death Star leaves and heads for the Earth.]

[Day 15. Location: Outer space. Time: 1 day to Earth.]

Pilots Telepathically to the K's: ...

[No answer.]

Pilots: Radio Main Cave. Hi the Death Star has come out of the Black Hole. What would you like us to do?

Jon: Wait one moment in bed, napping.

[Long pause.]

The AI's are being nice right now so we will not start another war. Go geosynchronous over the Main Cave. Come on down and visit for a while.

[In the background there is a Computer Voice (not Little Brother.) saying, "Announcement to all: Clean up needed on isle 3". Then it repeats.]

[Pilots and the spiders close by hit the mute and have their hands over their mouths, trying to not laugh.]

Pilots: Okay, we will have fun then soon with all of you and get some good food. Bye

[Pause.]

Pilots: I never knew Jon to be comical. Who do we kill first Marianne [gunners]?

Gunners: South America, Houston, Detroit if there, then Europe. South America is probably the weakest one then Houston, then Europe. We can ask if Manhattan is needed or not on the way.

[Pause.]

Did we invent warp speed? The Beta is on radar now and may get to us before we get to Earth. It was so nice we were able to watch the videos in the Black Box that was ejected 1 minute before impact.

[Day 16. Location close to Earth.]

{ Commanders telepathically to the Pilots: We will get to Earth before you get to it, so do you have any orders yet?

Pilots: "Clean up on isle 3." We have to tell you what all was said later. We are going south, north, north if need be, then far east.

Commanders: We will visit Mother first. If you need us, we can go West. Otherwise we are going southeast from there. }

[Location: Earth, 250 miles above the South American AI City.]

Pilots: Get ready, we are dropping down where we can get better radar scans and see if anything is coming our way.

[Long pause.]

Gunners: No AI's unless they are hiding under the trash. Visual, a thousand humans. Nothing launched.

Pilots: Someone take a Scooter down and talk to the humans, be armed, they could be Cyborgs.

[Scooter launches then floats in the air at 20 feet from hundreds of humans who are bent over, picking through the rubble.]

Alice [loudly]: Hey there, what are you looking for?

[The humans stop and turn around and run toward the Scooter. They are Cyborgs. Alice is shocked and starts to take off and then the Death Star starts shooting at the Cyborgs.]

{ Alice telepathically to their clan: Thanks. I would if they were going to eat us. }

[Alice flies around and lands back in the Death Star.]

Pilots: Ground Pound everything into Black Hole Marbles and do the usual cone mountain.

[1 hour later. The Death Star is heading to Houston at full speed.]

Gunners: Nothing good here, they have already started rebuilding the city. So expect lots of missiles.

Pilots: Here is my plan. A hard 90 degree so we are heading west at attack. Gunner, hit all the top of the city with Gravity Pounders. Lasers hit whatever you can under or behind the Gravity Pounders beams. 429's and other gunners keep the missiles off of us. We will fly over, do a 360 and do it all again, then straight up to loose missiles in upper atmosphere. Re-evaluate the damage.

[The Death Star goes down and toward Houston AI City. As soon as in range they shoot everything as they do the sharp 90 degree turn then go straight for the AI City. Missiles are launched and the 429 bullets, lasers and Gravity Pounder catch or destroy them, many parts of the roof sections start to fall downward into other floors causing damage. Lasers get some good shots at an angle into inside areas. The Death Star once over the old city mostly rubble, they do the 360 degree turn to once again be facing the city going east but this time more to the left and start the whole attack again, very few missiles are being fired at them this round.]

Pilots: Straight up hold on!

[Long pause.]

Gunners: Anything looking for us? We see nothing.

Amy Lynn [Winged folk.]: We caught 2 missiles and I cut the 3 gravity well for a second and dropped them in a hole on the second attack.

Georgie [Spiders.]: Not good, we are looking at the city it is growing back.

Amy Lynn: Let me see.

[Long pause. Amy Lynn and Georgie both look at the telescopes and discuss what each see.]

Amy Lynn: I am blind. But I can see in infrared. The AI's want us to believe the city is growing back.

Pilots: Okay we will bite. Flying toward Main Cave.

Gunners: What?

[Very long pause. Everyone is looking at each other.]

Pilots: Think that is long enough for the AI's to think we believe them?

[Everyone is cheering.]

Pilots: Same approach as last time, but this time I want the Gravity Pounders and the bulk of the lasers to hit the sides of our path. We hope to cave in the sides on top of the middle sections. If it doesn't work second part of rotation is more toward the right side same style as before.

Gunners: They will expect that, guessing. Far left and we can aim a lot at the bottom of right side, we might still get the right side to fall. They were stupid and build this city narrow and long and almost U-shaped, a square would be hard to kill.

Pilots: Good idea, instead of the 360 as before, a turn around and go west to east but low on left side and on the outside of left side wall. How long do you think this city would take to turn all into marbles?

Sis: 2.7 hours. I hate to say it ladies but our time is about up; both of us are bleeding out our noses. See you in Heaven. We had a great 2 lives, 57 years and 1 week.

Everyone: Goodbye Sis.

Pilots: Starting last run then we will turn everything to marbles. Or at least that in the plan.

Gunners: How many marbles can we hold in the lower Gravity Well to use as hand grenades on Euro City without killing our speed?

Lisa's: If we load and go up to very low gravity, we should not loose any speed and we can always just drop in over the city and spin like a top at high speed to hurl them outward. You get the idea.

Pilots: Figure up our decent backward like we are going to help Beta. Fire everything but 429's.

Gunners: The visual is all fake, look at the radar only. Both walls are falling in behind us.

Everyone: YES!

Pilots: 5,4,3,2,1 OUT! Oops there went their holograph generators.

[Long pause.]

Gunners: Start the sweeping. We are going to aim at right wall it could still have missiles in it.

Pilots: Everyone else, let's make Black Hole Marbles for Euro City.

Aux (Jane's): We have courses for Euro City set. Detroit, Manhattan and California are for sure gone. We have been talking to our grandchildren we barely knew. Oh how sweet.

{Commanders telepathically to Pilots: How is it going?

Pilots to Commanders: We are starting to turn Houston AI City into marbles then we were going to scoop some up. Need us?

Commanders: We did in Russia and should shortly finish Euro City. Hong Kong is larger than California was and they have enough missiles to shoot down any of our satellites passing close to them. Janet's are visiting in-laws to get some ground forces. We really like the marble idea. We will meet in 03 over British port at 1 hour after the Cave's Etherium check-in.

C's telepathically to the K's and Jon: Sit down quickly. This is all the wisdom we acquired in space, just in case all goes too badly.}

{Commanders to Pilots and crew: Hong Kong is larger than California and Janet's were ejected. Looks like it may take both of us to do in Hong Kong and they seem to have lots of regular speed missiles. We have 6 hours to conclude and be in the Ozone layer over Hong Kong. Jon is going to let us know what the place looks like. Aux, take over; we are hitting the bed till later. Everyone grab a bed or nap. Little Daughter please take over the current patterns on marble creation; in 4 hours, wake up 3rd pilots to get us upward into no gravity and east. I programmed in escape route if something comes our way.}

Little Daughter: Will do.

[3.8 hours later.]

Little Daughter: Carla's wake up; time to take over the flying.

Carla's: We will use the Pilot Station down here. Thanks, anything to report?

Little Daughter: Nothing; we have a load of 1245 marbles in the lower outer Gravity Well, ranging in mass from 5 to 51 metric tons best estimate set for 36 hour decay.

{Janet's telepathically to Pilots and Commanders: We are having a birthday party with lots of guests. I wonder what her 13 million SafeMoon and her 13 billion Evergrow reflections would be now if the search kings and on-line stores hadn't made the AI's?

Pilots: A house and car payment each. So enjoy your birthday. See you all soon.}

[Day 16. Time Midnight.]

{Jon: Telepathically to the Death Stars: 20 seconds. Seriously Sexpot.

Sis: Everyone brace yourselves or sit down. This is going to be a great ride or just go to the showers now.}

[2 hours later.]

[Location: Ozone layer just outside of missile range over Hong Kong.]

Gunners: They are firing Nukes. Kinda stupid of them.

Pilots: Full speed. Drop marbles and hard left. They may have better designs.

[Death Star drops all the Black Hole Marbles.]

Gunners: Hitting them with decaying Gravity Pounders. Oh no Beta may have been hit. They didn't dump fast enough.

Aux: Hard up and left.

Pilots: Get us far away, then in space, but let's fly by the Beta doing it. Rolling the dice, 135 degrees.

Gunners: Snow blindness, visual and radar. Nukes went off; we have nothing on where we are going, keep lasers and 429's ahead.

Sis: We have visual on nuke following us. And [long pause] and it is dead.

Pilots: Warp speed ladies, some are going to pass out.

Linda: Beta looks okay. She flew under us.

Gunners: Still snow blindness.

[2 minutes later.]

Aux Gunners: Clear skies behind us. That is one giant meteor shower.

Pilots: As pretty as it is, we are going down with it. Arm the Black Hole Bomb.

Gunners: Sis how?

Sis: We forgot we had a false alarm and then just died according to the records in about 8 hours, just too much going on. We were brought back because Sexpot figured since we died years early, we were fixable.

Amanda-Lee's: We are armed.

Pilots: When we can separate the lower section and let it appear to be the Beta, 2 spiders will probably have to stay with it in a Scooter to do the fake look. Start the Hologram Generators and make it look like both are fully there. Two can play at this game.

Pilots: Little Daughter can you draw 2 circles over Hong Kong for maximum area and take over control of the Gravity Pounders to pull us over the closest circle. Then sent picture to Beta 5 seconds before impact.

Little Daughter: Calculating. [Pause.] Done.

Pilots: Aim everything offensive you can at the other circle.

Sis: We are leaving; we made a 4 engine a Black Hole Bomb. Aim us at part of the city that will not be caught most likely, we will not be awake to see it. Sorry we can not make a 2nd one.

Aux: We have it Sis. Jesus, please help us make the AI's extinct. Amen. Pray everyone, 1.5 minutes.

Gunners: The Beta is shooting the missiles coming at us under the meteors. I guess the AI's figured some would get through. The Beta is way out of range of Hong Kong.

Linda: Ejecting Sis, Godspeed ladies.

Gunners: We are taking hits, going to get real bumpy.

Pilots: Hard 360 spiral to center. 30 seconds.

[Long Pause.]

Sis telepathically to the Death Star crew: WE [WEEEE. Cut off.]

[Detonation.]

Amanda-Lee's: 8,7,6,5,4,3,2

[Detonation in the southern part. Mushroom cloud, then looks like a rewind of the film as it pulls back into the crash site and the pieces of the city start coming apart and slowly disappearing into the crash area. A massive tidal wave is made and hits land, knocking down what were buildings in Hong Kong before the AI's and more of the AI's Bio-City falls from the tidal wave.]

[2 minutes later.]

[Beta comes flying just above the collapsing southern section straight toward the northern part still left and 6 scooters are ejected. 2 of the Scooters, hit unharmed pieces in the Southern part and smaller versions of the mushroom and the rewind effect as those sections just seem to disappear as they implode. Beta keeps plowing through the city collapsing parts in front of it till it arrives at dead center of the circle and detonates.]

[Meanwhile at the Main Cave.]

Sexpot: The AI's had a major operation going in the cave section of San Francisco. I passed by buckets and buckets of ruby and cobalt diamonds. I grabbed some and activated the dead Table to find myself on the Table on the Solar Platform about to crash into where I just escaped from. I felt I was in a Rewind loop like Carrie Ann. So I had nothing to lose but jump. I have no clue what happened till I woke up here.

Jon: We have been played!

{Jon telepathically to Everyone: We have been played; the AI's are in the world wide cave system, probably heading for the Spider Cave. I would guess the AI's will have the cyborgs walk through the

Black to drain the lake so they can get inside.

The K's to Everyone: Who is going to expire this week? We probably have a suicide mission for you.

The A's to Everyone: We expire early next month and we have flown in the Cave System from here to the Spider cave more than once; we volunteer. We had a great previous life and a good short one now.

Liza to Everyone: I hate this stuff, sorry; I am in the Black Lake; wait. [Long pause.] There are winged-folk in the Black Lake here. Come here ladies. Kamie stop! Punch her out.

The lake is full of them. [Pause.] A lot of these I don't know, guessing Clara never rounded up everyone. Some are in 'fight mode', some are just scared, as I would be, some are just dazed.

[Long Pause.]

Liza to Everyone: Dad, if they get in here. Do I make Texas the new Panama Canal? We can't take the chance the AI's can figure out the tech in the Spider Cave and how Monster kept going back decades in time vs. our 1 week limit. The AI's could send something or someone back 10 years before Monster gave you Big Brother. The AI's would end democracy sooner than the November 3rd 2020 election. Brainwash all of mankind even more, destroy all the governments and mankind would start World War III for the AI's.}

{Jon telepathically to the K's: Tell me if you are keeping secrets about the Spider Cave?}

The K's: Sorry, the C's probably don't have secrets either. If we had, we might have tried for 12 years ago.}

[Location wide orbit around the Moon.]

The C telepathically to Little T's: Start it up. Hong Kong had 2 Death Star sized implosions. Wait radio call.

The K's: We need you back so we can go to the house of musical chairs as fast as possible.

The C's: Big celebration party? Surprise us. Bye.

[20 minutes later, the C's land.]

{The C telepathically to Little T's: Spider Cave must be under attack. Get everything going as fast as possible. See you soon.}

[6 hours later.]

[Janet's walk into the Death Star and pull out the Commanders from the moot.]

Janet's: You may be confused. This is the second time the image has been used. We have the Black Boxes of the original and will pick up the second so all of you can watch. Also a surprise, a Death Star 2 which we called it, 'The Beta' since Kala and what is left of the Winged-folk and Beastie race are here on the Moon and made it from the original designs. We thought all we have is cleanup; the major AI's cities, all of you destroyed mostly, if not all.

Commanders: Thanks, we should pull everyone else out and have a movie night.

Janet's: But the Spider Cave seems to be under attack so we are leaving as fast as we can. We really don't know right now. Beta with the Death Crew will take about 5 hours to reimage. After all of us watch the Black Boxes we will see if anything on this one needs fixed and then send it back. Misfits and us sort of tweaked the Beta and it flies much faster.

Commanders: What tweaks?

Janet's: Addon's like 4 Gravity Engines, Black Hole Bomb, Imager, 5 Main Power Reactor Stations, 18 .429 caliber Gatling guns, 10 more lasers gunners, 1 additional wide gravity well. I think that was

about it. There really isn't much to do on the Moon for 344 people.

[The Janet's and Commanders keep pulling everyone out of the moot.]

Commanders: [Sarcastically.] That's all?

[The Commanders can't hold it in and start laughing.]

The Janet's: Oh and a Black Hole Grenade launcher which we now might have some grenades to fill and a middle rotating ring. You have to beat the Misfits, they started it.

[Misfits are standing behind the Janet's, looking at each other.]

Commanders [sarcastically]: Great, come on ladies let's see how bad the Misfits messed up our new ship when it gets finished.

[Misfits turn around and start to lead. The Commanders catch up to them and backward hug them.]

Commanders: Great job, we might have to promote you to Commanders one day.

Misfits [terrified look]: Ooohkay.

[Everyone walks through a portal and the hallways has tables set up with Spider Tubes in the middle, standing on end, surrounded by bowls of vegetables and fruit.]

Pilots: If the Spider Tubes were not there, we would have to think we are in Heaven not on Moon Base.

The O's: Thanks everyone. Prayer.

Kala: Thank you God for our lives, our friends and the abilities to destroy those who will never be in your Kingdom. Please guide us through our lives and guard us against evil and forgive us our sins when we fall short. Thankful for the food and please help this food to nourish and maintain our bodies. We pray that our future governments will only do what is right in your eyes. In Christ name we pray. Amen.

Everyone: Amen.

Kala: The least we can do for our hero's.

Commanders: Janet's not eating?

Janet's: No, we already ate and ate. The garden downstairs has stuff rotting in it with only 344 of us. I doubt Ester would believe that the garden has become as big as it is in only 10 years.

{The C's telepathically to all on Moon Base: Sorry everyone, the Spider Cave is under attack. As soon as Beta can launch with best crew, get going. We don't have any details to tell you.}

{The A's telepathically to Jon & the K's: Really bad news they have been down here for a long time every path we passed is full of metal. We are doomed there are millions of them. The AI's from the Spider Cave can re-infect every country on this planet. The AI's are a newer version of themselves too. They ignore the scooter and they have recharging stations with lighting every so often. The tunnels are mostly dark so they are using radar or infrared.

Jon: Thanks ladies. Come on back if you can. Ideas, K's?

The K's: We read everything the C's sent us for Death Star redesigns but not sure they can help us now.

A's: We brought a helium bomb and 4 black hole grenades to set it off, should we try and kill a 100,000?

Jon: No, I think it might blow a whole invasion force into the Spider Cave or just blow a hole up to ground level and not do any real damage.

K's: We were naive. We thought we owned all the Cobalt and Ruby diamonds and didn't mine all of them either that we knew about.}

[Jon walks to the Chair and Main Table Area. Jon turns on the reactors and sits in the chair. The K's, Sexpot and Genny follow him.]

=====
[The Deal with Clara.] [TOC](#)

[Location Main Cave, The Bedroom. Time: 75 Years Ago. Time: 7 AM.]

[Jon's phone rings.]

Jon: Another nightmare ladies?

The K's: Yes. Mankind is doomed.

Jon: I am going to the Lounge.

[Jon and the K's go to the Lounge and sit on the long couch.]

[Location: Lounge Area. Time: 7:20 AM.]

Lesa: Jon, look what I caught, a supernaturally infected human.

Clara: I see you caught everyone else too. What are the strange Crystal devices?

Jon: Please K's give them the gory details of your new toys.

The K's: These, in simplest terms, will take your energy make it into atoms and spread the atoms into every part of this universe. We figure in about a trillion years, you might exist again. Or hopefully your atoms will [Louder with each word.] find supernovas, suns, or black holes.

[Normal.] Anyway, we will have you out of our miseries, FOREVER!

Clara: You know you will kill the hosts.

Jon [sarcastically]: That's the best you can beg.

[Sternly.] It is war and your hosts signed up for it. So to kill 13 hosts to rid the universal of centuries of YOU sounds like a very small price and the world would thank us, if it knew. 13 soldiers dead and 13 Time Demons, NICE!

[Jon grabs his head and is in severe pain. Clara's mouth drops and is in complete shock. Janella wraps around Jon from the back and reverse hugs him with legs and arms.

[Janella lays on the back of the couch normally. Kala and Sexpot show up.]

[Pause.]

Clara: Kala, you know I designed that body for you.

Kala: Thanks, it has served me well. Hope you enjoy oblivion. K's, absolutely love the toys.

[Kala turns around and walks away.]

Clara: Thanks to me, you met the K's early on.

Jon: I met the K's from Monster's time line not these K's who have no alliance with you.

Clara: Sexpot, I could have killed you.

Sexpot: Maybe you did and that is why Monster existed, I didn't save Jon. But aren't these toys so sweet. K's start with her disciples, she is last. I want her to see them all die first.

The K's: Gladly, powering up now.

Clara: Wait, Jon, let's talk privately. I need to discuss some things with you only.

Jon: Okay. Everyone please leave us. If I shout, send pieces of them to universes far far away!

Sexpot: You know this is a trick.

She is just trying to save her atoms.

K's, I might like you after all.

[Sexpot wraps her arms around the shoulders of the K's and they skip off together like kids.]

[10 minutes later.]

{Jon telepathically to Sexpot: Does our lake have water in it so we can allow our 13 enemies to obey Jesus in Acts 2:38 & 22:16 and be immersed to have their old sins washed away.

Sexpot: You believe them?

Jon: They asked, I have no choice, God said. I would never want to be standing in judgement if I ever said no. If Clara is lying, we let the K's play nuclear physics later as judge, jury, and executioner.

Sexpot: We have water. I will get a couple people on the immersions of them now. I bet Mrs. Stitches would love to do those.

Jon: Great idea, ask Sherrie and Genny too.}

[Erase it all.]

[10 minutes later.]

[Kala, the K's, Genny and Janella return to the Lounge Area.]

Jon: K's, have you tried to tell anyone our recent nightmares?

K's: We can't. Even our clan, doesn't know.

Jon: I have the same problem, even Janella and the Pipsqueaks don't know and they know everything.

[Jon acts like his head is hurting again, even longer this time and bends over. Janella behind Jon on the back of the couch, intertwines her legs and arms around him again.]

[Jon's expression changes from pain to normal. Jon looks at the super large monitor on the wall that has the date on it and the sky outside the cave.]

Jon (smirk smile, then just smiling and turns to the K's): K's, I think the design of your power plants are obsolete now, make sure no one outside of this cave can copy or activate one of your reactors. I think we should put a way to turn them off and on from here. Maybe satellites so if the satellites die, they turn off without us in a week. Please, recall them all and redo them and start with the Blue State strongholds first and then Blue Cities.

Make sure your Earthen Globes has the same features but always stay spinning. I would hate that an army might invade through those giant holes into here.

The K's: We have given some thought to redoing our alloys too. Okay boss. The Earthen Globe externally will be easy to do in less than a day. Should we let the Bio-vitamin and Bio-food still come out?

Jon: Not a bad idea.

[Loudly.] Spiders going to the Black Cave come here please.

[Two spiders dressed in pink spandex walk over to the Lounge Area.]

The A's: Hi Jon. We are the A's. We have been spiders for 4 days.

Jon: Are you smart?

The A's: We are sisters, her was high school valedictorian, then her was next year's.

[Pointing back and forth but speaking in unison.]

We both graduated college with 4.0's at 20 years old. So, [pause, humble look] yes we are smart.

Jon: Good, I have a job for you if you want it. The Spider Cave in Texas has an ancient subway system. We don't know who built it either. I want you to figure out how to get from the Spider Cave in Texas to the San Francisco cave that was buried a century ago, as your first priority. I am guessing there is one to Manhattan, Houston, and Detroit, if you get the idea. I think the ancient subway would help us expand. When you can figure out how all the Spider Cave's other ancient tech works we might be able to save the human race. You have 5 million dollars to start for expenses. You will be the leaders of your clan as you find people who want to be explorers.

The K's: We are going to start mapping all the Caves off of the Main Cave here. We started and then didn't finish. We will supply you the same mapping equipment you need for each contributory you find. Cracks may need different investigations if large enough that a human can get through and truly see if they dead end later. Sherrie will hook you up with ways to have Cave only internal communications. You might take Cara and clan with you one day in a few weeks. They might have some great ideas for new Tunnel Scooters and a couple Senior Spiders.

A's: We would love to do that, thank you Jon so much.

Kala [hanging upside down on the roof above the Lounge]: A's, if you run into humanoids, retreat and get me. K's with a lot of the Oil and Gas Fracking and earthquakes both Cave structures might meet in places so you might be double mapping.

{Jon telepathically to Katie: Please take the A's to the Spider Cave when you can. They are in the Lounge right now.}

[Pause.]

[Katie appears, grabs the A's and disappears taking them with her.]

Kala: I am missing something, Jon?

Jon: I would like to get the stuff in there before someone else does. We don't want competition.

Big Brother record this for Liza on her birthday in the year I die. In her own voice: 'Remind me that peace should never be considered a time to be lax on weapons.' Then a note from me, 'Look at history: friend one day and sell you to the highest bidder the next.'

K's: I guess you didn't break the Prime Directive, Boss. Our turn.

{Telepathic conversation to all Cave Dwellers.

The K's telepathically to Everyone: The Lounge is rather dull, please start lining up all of the Rare Earth Jars in the Lounge area and then let Genny decide, when we have too many, and where to put our decorations next, impress her with the pretty containers.

Cara to Everyone: I am laughing. No you don't; I am all over the jar thing.

Skate: We might like to have some in our living rooms. They are pretty.

Jon to Everyone: I want all of the humans, spiders and octopi to have a test for metal poisoning every physical since almost everything we touch in here has metal in it more often if needed for people like our Crystal Miners.

K's: We want all Spiders to be clean inside as well as outside, so from this time onward we want all Spiders to take showers first and sleep in containers of Black one day every 2 weeks or wear Black one day per 2 weeks. Not so sure we don't need to make the containers to fit many or not and discuss, lay down or sit ideas. This should help those occasional accidents we seem to find, weekly or more often is fine too.

We would strongly recommend the Octopi to do something similar for yourselves, maybe use the expired blood and expand our Blood Bank for any emergencies since we have gained so many in recent years. Ester is a vampire too.

Ester: Thanks, my kids love it too. Then they are human looking. Expired is fine. Dead people are fine too if not preserved yet.

Kala: I think this is a great idea for my people from time to time. But Spiders and Octopi go first.

Jon: Let's keep things close. X2's we want the other side of the 4 lane to be BIG, real BIG. I don't care if 20 Invitation circles are in the complex. Same deal at Piper's for maybe an outdoor one. Keep both areas daylight in case we would ever have an emergency type event.

The K's: As we make newer designed reactors, we can use the old ones there for now.

Jon: Soon, lets look at reclaiming Crystal and other material from the river mouths and all oceans, sell the super pure water back to the cities or move it to the beginning of some really dirty rivers like Miss White and the Mexicans started years ago. Miss White we want to discuss possibly setting up lots more of these at river mouths.

Miss White: Would some Silver based beasties like to play in water all day?

Jon: Mia and Phoebe you both like new projects. I wonder what we would find at the ocean bottoms at those mouths but we don't want to harm the ocean-life there.

Miss White: I want the boss' job if you have an opening. I will post it so others can apply if they want.

Jon: Okay, Miss White.

[The Little T's walk into the Lounge close to the K's.]

The K's: Yes, Little T's. I see you changed colors again.

Little T's: We keep growing fast and eating constantly, so hand-me-downs. Sexpot doesn't seem to be concerned she just calls us another "Phoebe". We want to build a Death Star for our Science Project next year.

The K's: Sure.

[The Little T's perk up.]

Little T's: Thanks. You are not kidding, are you?

Jon: The K's and I will help you create the weapon systems. I doubt you need them for your project but still a good idea to make room for them later. Or maybe we just add a ring later? What do you think K's?

Janella: Sarge and I have been working on the ultimate machine gun set up that you can have to go in the Death Stars. A few Atlanteans, lots of Muslims and Chinese are still around who might need extinction.

Jon: Multiple calibers should be an option, 17 to 50.

Little T's: EEEEEEE. [Running off.]

Mrs. Stitches: Cute more screamers.

Jon: If it becomes too much for them after they see the current plans, what if we centralize our communications to be space stations with ways to come on in as emergency backup power plants and shoot the energy down in laser beams?

Expand the lighting outside to about a square mile and bury the location locking blocks really deep, so even in a full on hurricane the reactors will always come back or stay home. Plan soon to make at least 1 square mile daylight at any big Invitations that way too for advertising.

Genny: Do you want to go that big, Jon?

Jon: Don't you, Mrs. Humanitarian? We should have more Spiders and their ratio to Octopi to match the Winged-folk for starters. We can always built Bio-Cities over caves that link here and expand from maintenance to production and Invitation staff in each area. I could see the Trash Earthen Globes expanded 300 miles that way in the Caves that connect to here.

Janella: Stop smiling so much spiders or your faces might break.

[Everyone laughs.]

Genny: I love you. The planned Kala City Hydroponics Bay Expansion and duplications are full on now. Ester, did you hear that?

Jon: I love you but that could be torture.

What are cobalt or ruby diamonds worth if they were on the market vs. clear?

Genny: They would sell for 1/3 to half price of our clear at best. They are pretty but still flawed in people's eyes.

Jon: I want you to buy everyone of them you can find and we will exchange equal to equal weight for clear. Go 4x what Crystals are worth. We are going to have to power our expansions and cut out any future competition just like the Chinese did to us with Rare Earths.

Ester: Starting in 18 days, usually 7 to 21 each time Genny wants.

Genny: I better get busy on buying requests.

News Rooms, we need a new advertisement.

The K's: We have 7 caves now we know that have crystal resources in them, X's and Z's Spider clans suck them dry wall to wall, including Jon's Coal Mine Cave, leach beds, wells or any other associated areas next to the 7 caves which have Silver Dust, gems or Crystals, even broken ones. Then clean the walls before you leave and circle back for the ones who we can't drain dry whenever we can and make sure no one can get inside see our Security Teams.

Jon: Expand to test river beds and such world wide, maybe we can find other fertile caves.

The K's: Cara, I think Foggy, one of our newest, would love to work with you on Bio-cities.

Janella: I have a Nobody on each shoulder just craving to talk.

Jon: Yes ladies.

Me-Tis: We think the Silos would make a great fish farm and training area for Sarge's and Misty's divers and the military winged-folk and a few hundred feet they connect to the lake in the forest.

Mu-Tis: We think we should look at remodeling all our entrances into the Cave. Got water?

K's: Great idea Nobodies. XD's would you like to make sure the silos are empty of anything of value and then Ground Pound everything to the walls and give it a wide mouth at the top so it can have a beach and a swimming area.

Ester will you flower the new fish hatchery for us like you did the lakes?

Silver and Ester: Love the idea. Sorry, no more fish on the menu this month.

XI's: Rectangle entrances would be so much better and we can pay in gallons of water. The Little T's already asked us to borrow 4 12' power reactors.}

Jon quietly to the K's: If the Little T's are mentally leached information from the 2 of us, maybe time for clan rearranging before they are grown. They look already like 14 year olds now?

K's quietly to Jon: We will lock the Humble Files down to Pipsqueaks and Other K's and they can have Senior Spider Membership and we will keep them close to us for a while in case they are leaching knowledge from us.

{XD's: We are in the Yard. I think the Silos are burping large chunks. There went a hunk of an old missile, now a desk. This is better than fireworks. I don't remember 12 foot power crystals stored over there. We have the power plant for you, Little T's. Channel 27 if you want to watch. BYE.

[Jon leans his head back to look at Janella. Janella wraps her legs around him and kisses his forehead. Me-Tis and Mu-Tis have disappeared.]

*K's: Hey Executive Clan meeting in Humble Cave. A's, Foggy, Little T's, Me-Tis and Mu-Tis and all of Jon's kids, please come. We are making a brand new world starting today. Bye all.
End of telepathic conversations.}*

[Alternate Scenario.] [TOC](#)

Jon: K's remember Carray's bomb. How did you break the crystals?

K's: High frequency sound.

Jon: Drone or scooter? Will high frequency echo?

K's telepathically to Senior Spiders: We need the F1-12's to California and some support scooters and pooper scoopers to find us the opening into the cave that was under San Francisco.

The AI's are in the Spider Cave's subway structure and are version 2.0.

X2a's, would you find out the frequency that Crystals and reconstituted ones break? Then figure out a way to make those sounds loud, really loud. I am thinking our Theater amplifiers are the most potent that we have on stock. Then when done, how many devices can you make? Can we print them in volume with drones attached? Maybe even make our own cruise missile with devices attached.

XD2's, we always thought the Spider Caves Subway Center Hub had a dome on top. Very carefully remove all the dirt off of it.

[Time: 1 Day Later.]

{XD2's telepathically to Senior Spiders, Jon, Liza: We found possible cave openings everywhere but Manhattan we think. They are all very much below lake or sea level. The Dome is made to be raised completely with some alloy rods to hold it up with interlocking slots similar to the way a bumper jack works on a car.

K's: Can we get a Gravity Pounder under the doom at full height?

XD2's: May we suggest just removing the doom since we have full powered Spiders and Octopi with minor adjustments, 30 minutes. We installed disintegration screens on all the portables probably after you were dead. Then one F1-11 or 12 could take all the volume of whatever comes out.

X2a's: We have our amplifiers ready for all the caves and portals, not pretty sine waves but they work. Multiple rotating input frequencies, so they may not discover what we are doing until too late. We also added 10 Hz to possible shake them to death or cyborg humans. Reconstituted Crystal are extremely fragile when it comes to vibration.

K's: Are they tunnel usable or ready?

X2a's: Yes. Drone for babies, not super powerful and scooter will do great for the other ones.

Jon: Do a high frequency call to Beastie and Winged-folk, I seriously do not expect anyone showing up first.

B's: Already started 12 hours ago, Jon, no one yet or return squeaks.

Jon: Once you are in location and have support open the portals and see what comes out, if anything.

XD2's: You didn't know, Jon. We have cameras to the first splits in the Ancient Subway inward or about 10 miles, no movement yet.

Jon: Start in the caves first. Take the scooters in. At an intersection, if you don't have another scooter available leave one of the babies. I am guessing we are going to run out of resources quickly. Use your best judgement that is all we can do.

T's, please get up as many satellites as you can over land. If they pop out in the Congo, it would be nice to know. Do whatever you can. Janet's did you by chance hear that? If so, please ask the

Commanders of the Death Stars to do the best they can.

Commanders: Little T's and Misfits are working on #3 with a few hundred helpers and some spider beasties from the Main Cave should arrive in 3 days. They are all balled together sleeping. But we will do the best we can with 1 and 2, Jon.

Jon: Work on a way to get Gravity Pounders into the tunnels should this work. Take Gravity Pounders in tow to take care of any possible ambush. If we find a tunnel that only goes point A to point B that is all clear, mark it, record it. Do whatever you can.

Zbee's: We have opened up Hong Kong, Europe and Russia with no cave structures we can find. Houston turned out to be void we think and Venezuela may have a cave, still doing cleanup. Detroit Cave was still sealed from the cave in and all the broken Crystals we left behind were used.

The AI's opened up various Interstates at least on 1 side to and from some of their locations to move crystals we presume.

C's: We are still working on those 2 possible ones. We think Houston should be the first one flooded it we go that way. If water floods it, then we just missed it.

B's: Make a couple Gravity Pounded Balls from water and put in first.

Jon: Good idea. It is easy to suck it back out later if need be and it will not stop the sound. Jesus taught us that long before scientists. All you can do is the best we can. Oh wow.

B's: We need to flood all of them with at least some water. We have the F1-12's close to everywhere we need to do.

A's: We were joined to the conversation. We know where to take the first amplifier, a hub of 5 different tunnels.

Jon: You're first then. Keep bouncing around in case they brought missiles with them.

Liza: Run same set through out Northeastern Link, Southern Link and both Western Links of our Cave Structure. In case they have tried to bore their way in.

C's: We tweaked their bomb to be more heat than explosion in case of capture with dead man switches.

Jon: Pray ladies and do what you think is best. We called Evil, Good, and allowed it to continue in America. God didn't approve apparently because from the humans I met so far, they were God's people not non-Christians.

K's, when you figure out how to get back to just humans, we are going to map these tunnels for sure. I would love to have given them a way out. Leave them totally alone in that area and let all of them go there. Kill all in 6 months. A's I am going to try and travel the Ether to see if I can tweak which one is best of the 5 choices. Everyone has been doing a great selfless job. Thank you, pat each other on the backs.

K's: I am proud of what all of you have accomplished.

Everyone: Thanks.}

{Jon telepathically to Ester: I need my Silver level up, game?}

Ester to Jon: Genny and I are coming.}

[Time: 20 Minutes later.]

{Jon telepathically to A's: We are in the Spider Cave. Launch when ready.}

A's to Jon: We feel all of you.

[Location: Ancient Subway, junction of 5 tunnels. Time: 75 Minutes later.]

A's: And let the music start.

[AI's below and as far as the A's can see drop dead. To avoid detection, the A's are flying around the junction area with various circles and stops.]

Jon to A's: The 3rd tunnel clockwise looks like the winner toward Mexico. Fly fast and weave a lot. [4 hours later.]

A's: Most all of this is the same. AI's carrying material toward some manufacturing or storage area, recharge stations and not much else.

Jon: Keep straight. At next junction go left tunnel. Clean up is behind you.

A's: Wow. We found some kind of headquarters. They are all dead it appears. But what is that giant box? [Pause.]

Jon: AR Laser on high and see if it melts, but keep moving.

The K's: NO. We need to get you to access the box first.

A's: Where are we at roughly?

Jon: Panama. A Gravity Pounder ship is coming to you shortly. They will not be using those dead AI's or charging stations for parts.

Jon to Xenia: Please fly the Gravity Pounder ahead toward South America, if you find an intersection send sound waves down each direction.

[Long pause.]

K's to A's: Close your inner eyelids and then shoot the AR Laser around the top part of the walls. We think those are power cables.

Ann's to Jon: WEEEEEE. Me and Mu would love this.

Jon to A's: Stop shooting. Gravity Pounder about 2 minutes away.

A's to Jon: We have the Gravity Pounder on radar.

Jon to A's: So far have you noticed if the tunnels go close to the surface?

A's to Jon: Yes it appears that we have some natural water breaks. If, say this area would have sprung a major leak the Spider Cave would not be flooded. So if we let the Pacific Ocean drain here this passage fills at Panama and has 40 miles north full of water.

[Long Pause.]

A's to K's: This is a hybrid brain setup like the missiles using some of our 6 foot crystals which are still intact and AI computer boards similar to Big Brother and 14 brains. Once we opened the shielding the little crystals starting cracking. We are giving the brains peace now.

[Long Pause.]

A's to K's: These were human brains very carefully tweaked to do some function. We are removing the 6 foot crystals and putting them in a stack. I know this is not our first priority but we need to get these power plants crystals out of here.

C's to A's: Xenia make the machine a marble.

K's to A's: Is there fiber optic cables or just power cables running out of the machine?

A's: Both. But we think we have a problem. Unless the Ancients put those power cables there, some go down passages that are underwater.

Liza telepathically to Everyone: When you go through the tunnels cut every power cable you can every few hundred or thousand feet whatever works. If you find power going underwater, we need to know. I wonder if they have submarine vehicles that they could use to flank us.

Pipsqueaks to Everyone: The T's are making a sub-scooter. Find us an underwater tunnel that still has a live power feed. First place we send it.

A's to Everyone: Something is coming our way from both tunnels. It sounds like tanks or some kind of chain driven vehicles. We are refilling our water tanks and will aim down the tunnel we just

traveled and Xenia please aim ahead. Bullets coming. Move Xenia!

[A's are laughing and then Xenia.]

Xenia to Everyone: The AI's are shooting each other with 50 Caliber guns. Both tunnels are perfectly aligned to each other. We are stuck here till the show is over.

Liza to Everyone: Finish cutting the power cables, if need be, see which direction is live. All scooters concentrate only on tunnels with live feeds. I doubt the AI V.2's have propane engines to charge their batteries like Symth Cars.

[Everyone laughs.]

[1 hour later.]

A's to Everyone: They must be out of ammo or finally killed each other.

Tera to Everyone: Hi ladies. We came to help; actually till you cut the final power cables we were just following the juice. The vehicle was a half track with all kinds of bullets and 4 machine guns and 8 AI's inside of a sealed box. Nothing says this vehicle could go deep into the ocean and it ran on battery power.

A's to Everyone: These cave AI's so far are tunnel dwellers. The rubbery tracks they use to move would get stuck in sandy or muddy soil or even wet grass. We think they are nothing more than slaves to move pieces or materials in all of these carts.

Liza to Everyone: Dad is very busy right now. So mom and I are going to try and travel the ether to see ahead of you.

Commander Beta's to Jon and Senior Spiders: We started looking for what we believe are power sources. On the border of Venezuela and Guyana, there is a mountain range that is not on our maps.

Jon to Commander Beta's: Be prepared for war and see what scooters can find.

Did you locate humans by chance?

Commander Beta's to Jon: They are in the mountain areas of Brazil mostly. [Long Pause.] Cyborgs are feeding holes in the ground from what appears to be decayed Gravity Pounder marbles. I think they have some of our Earthen Globes.

K's to Commander Beta's: We will get some Engineers to you shortly on how you make the Earthen Globe containment null. You will need to hit quickly and ride the surf of hot air and get into space fast.

Commander Beta's to Jon and K's: This sounds like fun, we will eject the crew who are not needed before we start. Hi Pipsqueaks. Bye all.

K's to A's: As soon as you can find where this tunnel goes into the underground production let us know. We have some ideas.

A's to K's: So far we have only been following one feed.

[Hours later.]

Liza to A's: You are at the edge of the mountains in Venezuela going due East. Speed up till you get to sea level and stop at where the highest peak is.

[4 Hours later.]

{Telepathic conversation: Jon, Liza, K's, Pipsqueaks, A's, Xenia and Tera. }

Jon: Xenia and Tera, aim high and make yourselves a large hole to the surface. The rounder the marbles the better they will roll, you will understand well soon.

[Long Pause.]

Xenia: We have clear skies above.

Pilots Beta: We are dropping an oil storage tank in 3,2,1. Should hit about 3,2,1.

A's: Splash.

Pilots Beta: Fly out and go West.

[A's, Xenia and Tera fly out and they see 15 scooters flying in with no pilots. Both Death Stars align above where the cyborgs are putting in raw materials. They drop in whole payloads of Gravity Pounder marbles and then fire lasers at the holes and in 5 seconds fly as fast as they can as the whole area turns red hot then a giant crater full of lava. Death Star flies back around and goes up and down the coast 200 miles up, the De-salting stations used to find crystal material are shutdown.]

[1 month later.]

{A's telepathically to Everyone: We finally found where the last tunnel goes. Sexpot, do you want to visit you old stomping ground Atlantis? A Black Hole device of some kind that didn't go off was powering the final tunnel. We have less than an hour to live. It has been such a great 2 lives. Do we fix it?

Also, we finally figured out the 48 brains. They were the Tech-Demons, billionaires, social media owners, some politicians, all the ones who believed they should control American and be its Gods. They wanted immortality and they achieved it in an aquarium of goo.

An Atlantean Cyborg when done would have commanded a bunch of robots and talked with 48 people who now are total insignificant and talk about what, the past or Climate Change? Got to love GREED. There were no offshoots of this tunnel once we left South America.

Liza to Everyone: You should not make a deal with the Devil, even when the Adversary looks like a beautiful woman or a man or even an AI.

Devil plays the long game; he always gets your non-Christian soul forever in the end.

Sexpot to Everyone: Godspeed Ann's; arm it. They wrote me out of history, paybacks are...[boom]!}

Jon: God, we will try our best to build a world where righteousness lives. We will never accept Evil as normal ever again. We will teach people that use 'Do not Judge' has nothing to do with what they think God said. Amen.

[Final Ending to Original Scenario.] [TOC](#)

[Nothingness.]

[Location unknown. Time: It was the future. Total blackness.]

The K's [sadly]: We expected so much more when time lines dissolve. There should be fireworks, parades, anything but this totally silent darkness.

Sexpot [sarcastically]: Kids!

Misty [sarcastically]: Really big kids!

Genny: At least all of us previous time travelers get to see the end. Bye all.

All: Where is Jon?

REWIND

Copyright 2022 by Mr. B.A. Nobody.

Stay turned for "Time Ghosts, The Beginning Years" & "Time Ghost - Jon's Cancer".